THE TRIVMPHS OF GODS REVENGE, AGAINST THE CRYING AND Execrable ſinne of Murther.

Expreſſed in thirty ſeuerall Tragicall Hiſtories, (digeſted into ſixe Bookes) which containe great varietie of mournefull and *memorable Accidents, Amorous, Morall, Diuine.*

BOOKE. III.

Written by IOHN REYNOLDS.

AT LONDON,
Printed by AVGSTINE MATHEVVES, for *William Lee*, and are to be ſold at his Shop in Fleet-ſtreet, at the ſigne of the golden Buck, neere Seriants Inne.
1623.

TO THE RIGHT HONOVRABLE, (AND TRVLY WORTHY OF ALL Honour) WILLIAM Earle of *Pembroke*, *Lo. Chamberlaine to His Maieſty*, *Knight of* the thrice Noble Order of the Garter, and *one of the Lords of His moſt Honourable Priuie Councell.*

RIGHT HONOVRABLE:

IT is not your *Dignities*, but your *Vertues*; not your *Greatneſſe*, but your *Goodneſſe* which firſt coniured my affection, then commanded my reſolution to direct theſe (forraigne) *Tragicall Hiſtories*, to your *Honours* protection and Patronage; For whiles others (ſayling with the corrupt Tyde and Courent of the times) not onely admire, but adore the exteriour parts of men, their *Fortunes*. I, for my part, both honour

and reuerence their interiour qualities, and ornaments, *Pietie*, *Fidelitie*, *Generoſity*, (three Daughters of *Heauen*, embleming and perſonating the three Heauenly Graces on Earth, *Faith*, *Hope*, *Charitie*) who tranſport and conuey our *Memories* as farre as the limmits of *Time*, and a degree beyond it, and (on the wings of *Truth*) mount our *Fames* from *Earth* to *Heauen*, from *Enuie* to *Glory*, and from *Mortality* to *Eternity*. Not but that I euery way reſpect and honour that blood which is *Noble*, but that I yet more deerely honour, and deepely affect thoſe *Vertues* which haue a ſecret, and (as I may iuſtly ſay) a ſacred power in them to enoble *Nobility*, both which tranſcendant *Priuileges*, finding hand in hand cheerefully to march, and realy to ſympathize in your *Ho.* (ſith vpon the reſplendant luſtre of your actions, *Enuie* is not capeable to inſinuate a blemiſh, nor *Detraction* of power to introduce or inforce a diſparagement) was the ſole preuayling motiue of this my *Zeale* and *Ambition*. And when I conſider that the Moralitie, Ends and Puniſhments of theſe foule and crying ſinnes of Murther, which my two former

Bookes

Bookes (of this *Nature*) haue already related and divulged to the world, haue not onely beene approoued but applauded of our moſt *Excellent*, and *Sacred King* (as onely ayming at Gods glorie, and our owne reformation and preſeruation) I rather hope then diſpaire, that this *Third* (wherein the iuſt reuenge of *God*, the Great and Supreame *King* of *kings*, is no leſſe apparant and conſpicuous) will be accepted and receiued of your *Ho.* Againe, it fights againſt Murther, which not onely ſeekes to ſlay *Humanitie*, but therein to murther *Religion*, which is the *Life*, and *Soule* thereof. It denounceth warre againſt *Nature* and *Grace*, againſt the Diuine Ordinances of *Heauen*, and the Coactiue and penall Lawes of *Earth*, whereby they are eſtabliſhed and maintained; as being the *Cyment* and *Sinewes*, the *Veines* and *Arteries* of *Monarchies* and *Commonweales*; as alſo againſt the Maieſty of *God*, and the crownes and dignities of *Soueraigne Kings* and Princes, his Royall *Deputies* and *Vice-gerents* heere on earth, ſith thereby hee loſeth ſoules and theſe ſubiects; yea, ſo generall and ſo prodigious a progreſſion, doth this ſcarlet

ſinne of premeditated and wil-full murther, make in the vniuerſall World, and with ſo bloodie a deluge & inundation, it not onely waſhes but (as it were) drownes the face of the *Chriſtian*, that wee haue now farre truer cauſe to crie out, and iuſter reaſon to exclaime, then did *Quintus Catulus* (ſo many centuries of yeares ſince) *O with whom, or where ſhall wee liue in ſafety; ſith in Warres wee kill thoſe who are armed, and in Peace, who are vnarmed*; Yea, your *Ho.* who (with a happie conſtancie, and conſtant happineſſe) is ſtill a profeſſed Champion for *Charitie* againſt *Enuie*, and a *Tutularie* Protector for *Vertue* againſt *Vice*, (whiles diuers great ones of the World, make it not onely their practiſe, but their glorie to performe the contrary) will, I hope, runne ouer theſe mournefull *Hiſtories*, (and the ſeuerall accidents they relate) with your eye of pittie, and ſpirit of compaſsion; and therein with a Religious ioy, and pious inſultation, not onely admire the *Prouidence*, but applaud, and magnifie the *Iuſtice* of *God*, in ſo timely cutting off theſe Monſters of *Nature*, and bloody butchers of Mankinde, with theſe their condigne puniſhments and deſerued

deſerued deaths; In which Hope and Confidence, this Booke is no more mine, but your *Honours*, and no leſſe is hee, who collected and penned it; and that my Name may futurely oblige mee to make this preſent promiſe of my penne reall; Whiles many others (in a vertuous emulation) contend to deſerue the *Honour* of your *Fauour*, and ſtriue to purchaſe the felicitie of your *Commands*, none ſhall doe it, with more Integretie and leſſe Vanity, then

Your Honours truely deuoted

IOHN REYNOLDS.

THE TRIVMPHS OF GODS REVENGE AGAINST the crying and execrable *Sinne of Murther.*

Hiſtory XI.

De Salez *killeth* Vaumartin *in a Duell*; La Hay *cauſeth* Michaelle *to poyſon* La Frange; De Salez *loues* La Hay, *and becauſe his father* Argentier *will not conſent that hee marry her, ſtifleth him in his bedd, and then takes her to his wife; ſhee turnes Strumpet, and cuts his throat; as hee is dying, hee accuſeth her of this bloody fact, and himſelfe for murthering his father* Argentier: *ſo his dead body is hang'd to the gallowes, then burnt*; La Hay *confeſſeth this murther, and likewiſe that ſhee cauſed* Michaelle *to poyſon* La Frange: *ſhee hath her right hand cut off, and is then burnt aliue*; Michaelle *is broken on the wheele, and his dead body throwen into the Riuer.*

ALthough our peruerſe *Nature*, and rebellious thoughts may for awhile make vs eſteem Enuy to be no *Vice*, and Murther a *Vertue*; yet if wee will erect the eyes of our *Faith*, and ſo looke from ourſelues to our ſoules, from Earth to Heauen, and

from Sathan to God; we shall then assuredly find that hating our Christian Brother, wee hate *Christ* who made vs Brothers: and murthering him, that we maliciously and presumptuously attempt to recrucifie *Christ*, by whom we must, without whom we cannot be saued. But if we will turne Atheists, and beleeue there is a Heauen, but no God; or Deuils, & say there is a *God*, but no Heauen, then that vncharitable *Tenet* of Enuy may be held lawfull, and this bloody position of Murther, practised, because priuiledged, else not. Wherefore let vs who are *Christians*, resend this deuillish doctrine, and doctrine of Deuils, to Hell from whence it first came, and to the deuill himselfe who first broached and inuented it: sith wee cannot professe it, without making our selues *Agents*, nor perpetrate it, without becomming his very limbs and members, in regard they will infallibly prooue the wofull forerunners of our misery, and the wretched Heraulds of our perdition: as the bloody *Actors* of this ensuing mournefull *History* will make good, and instance to vs in themselues when the seuere Iudgements, and punishments of *God* befell them so suddenly, as it was too late for them either to reuoke, or bewaile the enormitie of these their foule and infernall crimes.

Tholouse (as well for greatnes as state, the third citie & Court of *Parliament* of *France*) is the place wherin we shal vnderstand, there was lately committed & perpetrated, a *tragical History*, which hath many mournfull and bloody dependances; the which to branch forth, and depaint in their naked colours, we must vnderstand, that therein liued a Councellour of that

that famous *Court* (being a rich *Gentleman* well descended) tearmed *Monsieur de Argentier*, whose wife being deceased, left him father onely to one hopefull sonne, of the age of two and twentie yeares, tearmed *Monsieur de Salez*, who being wholly addicted to the Warres (from which martiall Profession it was impossible for his old father to diuert and withdraw him) he procured him an *Ensignes* place vnder *Monsieur de Roquelaure*, whom he serued in the *Adriaticke* Sea, vnder the *Noble* and *Generous Venetians*, who then stood rather iealous, then fearefull of the power and greatnesse of *Spaine*; but the *Chymera* of that warre (after the terme of three or foure yeares) being vanished and blowen away, and consequently betwixt those two mighty *Estates*, a new *Peace* contracted and concluded, (although the old had not been actually broken and delacerated) home returnes *Monsieur de Roquelaure*, for *Gascogny*, and with him *De Salez* for *Languedoc* and *Tholouse*, where he is receiued of his father with much content and ioy, not that hee was contented to see his sonne professe these Militarie courses (which onely affords the smoake of Honour, and not the solidity of profit) but rather that hee exceedingly reioyced to see him returne therfrom; and from whence, if he cannot hope that his requests will solely diuert him, yet he is resolued and assured that his Commands both will and shall. To which end, (as any humour is soonest subiect to be expelled and defaced by its contrary) so the old *Councellor*, hauing as much *Iudgement* and *Prouidence* in his head, as his sonne hath *Vanity* in his thoughts, and *Rashnes* in his resolutions, doth both request, and command him to leaue the War for Peace, Armes for Loue, the Camp

for the Citie, and his Captaine for a Wife, and so no longer to march and fight vnder the Banners of *Mars* and *Bellona*, but vnder the Standarts of *Venus* and *Hymeneus*; to which effect, he proffers him the choyce of many rich and faire yong *Gentlewomen* of the Countrey to his wife; but especially (and with farre more earnestnes then any other) to an exceeding rich match in the Citie, which was a yong *Gentlewoman* tearmed *La Frange*, being the onely child of *Monsieur de Clugny*, one of the most famous and richest *Presidents* of that *Court*, young of yeares, as being but sixteene, or seuenteene, but withall deformed both in fauour and body, for she was of a browne and sowre complexion, and not onely a Dwarfe in stature, but also exceedingly crooke-back'd, and yet beyond measure very amorous, and desirous of a Husband: onely the endowments of her minde most richly recompenced, and made satisfaction for the defects of her body: for she had an actiue and nimble wit, a sweet and sugred tongue, a rich *Memory*, and a powerfull and happy *Iudgement*, and was indeed an excellent Dauncer, and Singer, and withall a most perfect and exquisite Musician: But as yet *De Salez* warlike and generous resolution could not bee so soone made flexible, to embrace the motion of a wife, and so he returnes his deniall instead of his consent: but his wife old father *Argentier*, being therefore the more curious of his sonne *De Salez* his prosperity and welfare, because he apparantly saw he no way regarded, but euery way neglected it himselfe; (his sonnes exorbitant resolution notwithstanding) although hee knew that *Mademoyselle La Frange* had many *noble Suitors*, who sought her in mariage: yet relying vpon his ancient acquaintance

tance and familiaritie with the *President de Clugny*, as alſo that that daughter of his, and this his Sonne were of both parties their onely children. He taking time at aduantage, breakes with him about this match: whereunto *De Clugny* hearkens rather with delight then diſtaſt: for if there were any diſparitie in the dignitie of their Offices, he well knowes, that *Argentiers* blood and wealth did at leaſt equallize, if not exceed his; or if hee conceited any ſcruple in his thoughts, which impugned or impoſed it, it was onely becauſe *De Salez* was a *Souldier*, and not a *Lawyer*, and conſequently delighted to vſe his ſword before his Pen, and to weare and preferre a Scarlet cloke before a Blacke. But then againe, theſe repugnant and auerſe reaſons were as ſoone buried, as borne, and defaced, as conceiued and ingrauen in him; when hee conſidered that he himſelfe in his adoleſcency was of the ſame humour and inclination, and therefore that *Experience* had made him a *President* to himſelfe, that *Time* was both the reformer and refiner of manners, and that (in all well borne and well bred ſpirits) the *Precepts* of a father, and the ſweet conuerſation and counſell of a wife, had power to metamorphoſe the conditions of a young husband; whereupon the old fathers often meet and conſult hereon, and ſo being fully agreed on all conditions, they likewiſe appoynt a ſolemne meeting for their children, but the effect and iſſue of this their enterview, will not coreſpond and anſwer their deſires.

La Frange (as we haue formerly ſayd) being deformed and crook-backt, was no way agreeable but diſpleaſing to *De Salez*, but he being a tall, and neat timbred *Gentleman*, of a faire and feminine complexion,

ſhe inſtantly moſt tenderly affected, and dearly loued him. In a word, I muſt requeſt the curioſitie of the Reader briefly to be informed and aduertiſed, that as ſhee beheld him with the eyes of *Loue* and *Deſire*, ſo did he her with thoſe of *contempt* and *diſdaine*, ſhee building caſtles of content in the aire of her thoughts and hopes, that *Heauen* would make him her husband; and hee raſing both her and her memory out of that of his contemplations, vowing that Earth ſhould neuer make her his wife. Thus though the Parents haue already ſhut vp the Contract, yet their children ſhall neuer liue to celebrate the *Nuptials*, for we ſhal ſee diuerſity of *tragicall accidents* which are prouiding, and almoſt ready to oppoſe and impugne it. *Parents* think to be the cauſes, but *God* will ſtill bee the *Author* of Mariages: for if his ſacred and diuine *Maieſty* make them not firſt in *Heauen*, they ſhall neuer ſee them ſolemnized nor conſummated on *Earth*.

And heere, to make an orderly progreſſion in this *Hiſtory*, the Reader muſt likewiſe vnderſtand, that of all other of *La Franges* Suitors, none ſought her with ſo much importunity and impatiency, as the *Baron* of *Vaumartin*, (whoſe chiefeſt houſe and lands lay betwixt *Aigue-mortes* and *Narbone*) a Nobleman of ſome thirtie yeares old, who (like many others of his ſtampe and ranke) had ſpent the greateſt part of his youth and meanes in *Paris*, in laciuiouſly debauſhing and reuelling with the *Pariſian* Ladies and Dames: ſo that the vanitie of his pleaſures and expenſes making his lands fly away piece-meale, and the deuaſting and fall of his trees and woods, making the reſt of his Mannors ſhake, (an example and preſident for all other debauſhed *Gallants* to obſerue and beware of) he

leaues

leaues *Paris* with curses, and his bitter-sweet sinnes with repentance; and so (to repayre his errours, and to redeeme his lost time, and decayed Estate) he comes home to *Languedoc*, where hearing in *Tholouse* of the *President de Clugny's* great wealth, which he must solely leaue to his onely childe and daughter *La Frange*, who was now marriageable, he resolues to set all his other businesse and designes apart, and so to lay siege and seeke her of her father & selfe in marriage. Now to take the better direction, and obseruation of this *History*, we must likewise vnderstand, that this *Baron of Vaumartin* was of a swart complexion, a dwarfe of stature, and euery way as crook-backt as *La Frange*, which the more flattered him in his hopes, and egged him on in his pursute, hoping indeed (though with as much *Vanitie* as *Ignorance*) that this their corporall resemblance would the sooner induce and draw her to affect him: but his *Arithmatique*, or rather his *Iudgement* will deceiue him: for it is conformitie of *Humors* and *Inclinations*, and not of faces and bodies, which breedes and inflames a *Sympathy* in affections. But he is resolute in his research, and so better louing the fathers wealth, then the daughters *Beautie*, he wel assisted and followed (with a traine and equipage worthy of his birth, and her merits) first seekes the daughter of her father, then her selfe of her selfe. As for the old *President de Clugny*, hee hath heard of his debaushed pranks and ryots in *Paris*, & therefore vowes that his wealth gotten with wisedome, and purchased with prouideence, study and care in his *Age*, shall neuer pay for the obsceane pleasures, and vitious prodigalities of his *Youth*: and so with many verball complements (resoluing that he shall neuer triumph in the conquest

conqueſt of his daughter) he in generall tearmes puts him off. As for *La Frange* her ſelfe, the ſweetneſſe of *De Salez* complexion, and perſonage, is ſo deeply imprinted in her heart, and thoughts, that it is impoſſible for *Vaumartin* to find any admittance or entrance; for ſhee ſpeaks of none but *de Salez*, thinks of none but of *de Salez*, nor wiſheth her ſelfe with any but with *de Salez*. Againe, ſhe wonders at *Vaumartins* ſimplicitie, in ſeeking her for his wife: for if ſhe hate deformitie in her ſelfe, how is it either likely or poſſible, that ſhee can loue it in her husband? No, no; though *de Salez* will not loue *La Frange*, yet *La Frange* muſt and will loue *de Salez*, and none but him; and therfore ſith *de Salez* his ſweete feature is a pearle in her eye, needs muſt *Vaumartin* be an eye-ſore to her; yea, and if modeſty will permit mee to ſpeake or write an immodeſt truth, her heart doth ſo burne and flame in loue to *de Salez*, that both day and night, ſhee many times with ſighes, ſometimes with teares, wiſheth her ſelfe eyther impayled in his armes, or he encloyſtred in hers. Now by this time *Vaumartin* hath full notice and aduertiſement of her affection deuoted to none but to *de Salez*, as alſo of his ſleighting and diſdaining her: Whereupon encouraged by this, and diſhartened by that, he leaues no coſt, care, or curioſitie (eyther in gifts, dauncing, muſicke, or bankets vnattempted) to crowne his wants, rather then his deſires and pleaſures, with this though deformed, yet rich heire *La Frange*: ſo leauing him to his vaine ſute in courting her, ſpeake we a little of *de Salez*, that ſith he will not affect *La Frange*, wee may yet obſerue and diſcouer, which way he intends to ſhape the courſe of his affections and reſolutions.

For

For albeit he had formerly addicted himselfe and resolutions to be a professed Souldier; yet *Peace* calling him home now to *Pleasure*, and that to *effeminacy* (a fatall and dangerous *vice*, which (in the iniquity of these our times and depraued manners) not only most insensibly creepes into common Souldiers and Commanders, but also into all Armies, and into many *Estates* and *kingdoms*, still to the disparagement of their glory, and sometime to the price of their ruine, and perill of their subuersion) he began to let his Colours hang dustie, and his Pike and Partizan rustic by the walls, and to frequent the company of Ladies, which the old Counsellor his father obserues with ioy, hoping that in the end, hee shall draw him to affect and marry *La Frange*: but these hopes of his will prooue vaine, and this his ioy will soone bee exchanged into sorrow, and metamorphosed into affliction and misery: for that his *sonne* is partly resolued to marry, tis true, but as true it is, that he is fully resolued neuer to loue, much lesse to marry *La Frange*.

Now wee must vnderstand, that in *Tholouse* there dwelt a Marchant of Silkes (or as we in *England* say, a Silk-man) tearmed *Monsieur de Soulange*, rather reputed rich of others, then knowen so of himselfe, and yet being an old Widdower, to the end the sooner to get him a new wife, hee puts a good face on his estate, and maintaines himselfe, family, and house, with great pompe and expences, hauing no sonne, but three fayre daughters, all marriageable; and yet (out of *ambition* & in *emulation* of the *Gentry*) seuerally knowen and styled by their titles, not by their names, as *Mesdamoyselles de Marsy*, *La preVerte*, and *La Hay*, all famous for their beauties, and indeed for the pureneſſe

and excellency there of iustly reputed and held the prime Birds of the citie, and yet the yongest of them *La Hay* was the *Phenix* of all the three: for shee was so sweetly fayre, and fayrely sweet of complexion, as shee drew all eyes to doe homage to hers: so as it was almost impossible for any man to looke on her without louing her, or to gaze on her, without desiring her; for her body was so straight and slender, and the roses of her cheekes so deliciously gracing the lillies, and the lillies the roses, that the greatest Gallant eyther of the Citie or Country, held himselfe not only happy, but honoured with the felicity of her presence and company. But in one word, to giue these three sisters their true characters, *de Marsy*, and *la Preuerie*, were far more vertuous then *La Hay*, though *La Hay* were farre fayrer then they: for as *Religion* and *Pitty* was their chiefest delight and exercise, as more desirous to embellish their soules then their bodies; so wanton pleasure and vaine laciuiousnesse was hers, as rather delighting to please and adorne her body then her soule, they being more vertuous then fayre, shee more fayre then vertuous, different inclinations and resolutions; these as happy and blessed, as hers wretched and impious; their actions might haue been a President, yea a Pilot to haue conducted her fame as well to the Temple of *Honor*, as to the harbour of immortall glory, and of glorious immortality: but she vowes she wil proue a president to her self, & her pleasure shalbe a Pilot to her will, although she misse the *Temple* of *Honour*, to find out that of beastly concupiscence, and the harbor of immortall glory, to suffer shipwrack vpon the shelues of inglorious infamy, and the rocks of infamous perdition.

To

To this *Mouſieur de Soulanges* houſe, the beauties of his three daughters, but eſpecially that of *La Hay*, and (withall) her pleaſing and tractable affabilitie, enuites many young *Gentlemen* and the eminentſt Citizens, who there paſſe their time in courting and conuerſing, in dauncing, ſinging, and the like, whereunto the Youth of *Fraunce* more then any other people of the world, are moſt licenciouſly addicted; and as things are beſt diſcerned and diſtinguiſhed by their contraries, ſo the vertues of *De Marſy*, and *La Preverte* were made more apparant by *La Hayes* vices; and her luſt and whoredomes was more palpably notorious in their chaſtitie. O that ſo ſweet a creature ſhould be ſubiect to ſo foule a ſin; and that Beauty the beſt gift, (and as I may ſay the gold) of *Nature*, ſhould be thus vilified & polluted with the beaſtly pleaſures of carnall concupiſcence, and obſceane ſenſuality! for, Ay me, I write it with as much griefe to my ſelfe, as ſhame to her, ſhe was too prodigall of her fauours: for ſhee imparted them liberally vnto ſome for loue, but vnto moſt for money, not caring to whom ſhee proſtituted her body, ſo they filled her purſe, thereby to ſupport her pride, and maintaine the exceſſe and vanity of her bravery, and yet ſhe was ſo ſubtill and cautious therein, that although ſhee were ap[illegible]ſſed *Courtiſan*, ſhe would neuertheleſſe publikely ſeeme a pure and vnſported *Virgin*; and the better to fortifie her fame, and to make the reputation of her *Chaſtitie* paſſe currant with the world, ſhee would ſweare all thoſe to conceale her fauors, on whomſoeuer ſhe imparted and beſtowed them: but if this laſciuious ſubtiltie of hers haue power to bleare the eyes of the world, how can this her beaſtly ſinne of fornication

be vnseene of *God*, when the windowes, walles, and beames of her chamber, yea, her very bed whereon she hath acted her whoredomes, shall one day giue in *Euidence*, and serue as witnesses against her; yea, and be petitioners on earth that God will requite and reward them with *Vengeance* and confession from Heauen.

Now, among the rest of those debosshed *Gentlemen*, who deuoted their laciuious seruice, and sacrificed their fond affections to *La Hays* beautie; in comes our *De Salez* to inroule himselfe one: who, feasting and surfeiting his eyes, on the delicacies of her fresh and sweet complexion; leaues his owne fathers house, to frequent hers, yea his desires are so lustfully inflam'd with her beautie, as with his best art and policie, he lies close siege to her chastitie; and with many gifts, requests and oathes, seekes to endeere her to his desires and pleasure: But see the subtiltie of this laciuious young *Courtisan*, for knowing *de Salez* deepely in loue with her, and to bee the onely child of his father, and he one of the richest Councellors of *Tholouse*; she conceiues a plot in her head, to goe a fishing to make him her husband; and so beares her selfe wonderfull modest and coye, casting a cloake and vaile of chastitie ore her vnchast desires and actions, as if she were now a virgin, yea a *Saint* to him, though heretofore she had many times played the *Strumpet* with others: but her deniall doth rather inflame, then quench the fire of his lust, so as making many assaults, to raze downe the defences of her refusall, that he may enter and take possession of her heart and fauour: his best *Art* and *Oratory* prooues vaine; for she outwardly retires her affection, thereby the

the better, inwardly to aduance and finish her purposes: so this repulse of hers makes him hang his head, and become pensiue and melancholie; the true signes and symptomes of a foolish and fantasticall louer as in effect we shall shortly see *de Sales* will prooue himselfe: for the couldet she is in affection to him, the hotter is he in lust with her; forgetting the warres, yea, his discretion, himselfe, and all to crowne his desires in inioying her: the which she well obseruing begins to triumph in her good fortune, as thinking him already fairely come to the hooke, and so hopes that if the line of his *folly* and her good *fortune* and *wit* hold, she will soone make him her husband, and her selfe his wife: For hauing formerly met with many knaues in others, she now begins to rest confident either to find, or make a foole of him; thereby to serue as a vayle to ouervayle her whoredomes: He pleads hard to her for loue, She replies it is impossible to find loue in lust, he vowes he will die her seruant, she sweares she will neuer liue his strumpet: He protesteth that she shall share of his estate; She tells him plainely that she had rather liue a poore wife, then die a rich *Courtesan*; Hee replies that he adores her beautie, She answeres, that she knowes no other, but that he onely seekes to prophane and defile it: And here with more facilitie to make him swallow, either a Gull, a Gudgin, or both; she by stealth permits him to cull some kisses, aswell from the cherries of her lippes, as the roses of her cheeks: and in the Interim like an hypocriticall and dessembling queane, reads him many lectures on the pureneſſe of *Chastitie*, and the foulenesse of *Lust*, on the blessednesse of *Marriage*, and the wretched estate of *Fornication*: Pro-

phane and impious giglet, whose speeches are perfumed with *Vertue*, and yet her actions stincke, and are poluted and infected with *Vice*: dessembling *Syren*, who casts foorth bitter sweet inchanting tunes and charmes to please the sence, and yet purposely to poyson the soule, pilles of worme-wood candid in sugar, honny to the pallate, but gall to the stomacke: A fatall rocke whereon many inconsiderate and deboshed young *Gentlemen* haue vnfortunately suffered shipwracke, a wretched *Gulph* and *Labirinth* which containes all varietie of endlesse miseries and calamities, whereunto whosoeuer enters with pleasure, is sure to retire with teares, curses, and repentance; A plague sent vs from heauen in our age, for a iust guerdon and recompense of the sinnes and folly of our youth. And into this intricate Labirinth and bottomlesse Gulph of miserie and calamitie, is our rash and lustfull yong *Gallant*, cheerefully entering and steering his course, without either the Starre of hope, or Compasse of felicitie and safetie, bearing out toppe and toppe Gallant, yea (as I may say) with all the sayles of his folly bearing; and with the flagge Ensigne and Pendants of his obscæne and laciuious desires, playing and dallying in the Aire of *La Hayes* fatall and infectious beautie; which hath so solely surprised his iudgement, captiuated his thoughts, and eclipsed his discretion, as in her absence and presence he extolls aswell her *Vertues* as her beautie to the Skies: vowing that shee is so faire a *Nymph*, and so pure a *Virgine*, as she deserues rather to be his wife, then his Strumpet, or rather not his strumpet but his wife; And so two moneths being past since he first frequented her, and sought to seduce and obtaine her to his laciuious desires;

sires, and seeing (dessembling queane as she is) that therein she bore her selfe infinitely chast and modest, and that it was impossible for him to obserue or remarke any other inclination or testimonie, either in her word or carriage, his wits are so besotted and intangled in the fetters of her beautie, that he preferres her sweet feature and complexion, a thousand times before *La Franges*, deformed; and vowes that he had rather die *La Hayes* slaue, then euer liue to be *La Franges* husband: But this folly of his in the end shall cost him deare, and so lead him to another, farre more vnnaturall, and as I may iustly say, damnable: But we must proceed orderly in this History, and do therefore reserue that part till anon.

By this time the slie subtiltie, and seeming chast behauiour of *La Hay*, hath acted wonders in *De Salets* heart, so as she now hopes confidently, and shortly to play her prise in surprising him, for he is extreamely amorous besotted, and as I may say, drunke with the loue of her selfe and beautie: so on a Sunday, as shee returned from *Vespres*, he repaires to her fathers house to see her, who he finds in her chamber alone, waiting and attending him: hauing purposely dighted her selfe in a rich new Gowne and Petticote, and trimmed and adorned her selfe in her gayest & most curious attire, thereby with more ease and facilitie to draw him to her lure: So as her beautie being both seconded, and graced by her apparell, she so rauished his heart, and delighted his sences, as he cannot refraine from kissing her; but this hony of her lippes, will in the end proue poyson to his heart: And heere againe he layes close siege to her chastitie, but still she giues him the repulse and refusall, as if she were a

Diana,

Diana, and no *Venus*: He vowes he doth affect, and will euer honour her; And she, that if he honour her, will still affect him: In the the way of *Loue*, quoth he, I am wholly yours; and quoth she, in that *Honour* I will not be mine owne but yours: I will quoth hee in all affection both liue and die your seruant; and replies she, In all chastity, I will liue to die your handmaid: He affirmes, he cannot be more hers in heart, then he is; nor I quoth she, lesse yours in lust, then I am: It is quoth he my *Loue* which makes me report so much; and quoth she it is my *Feare* which makes me affirme no lesse: Why, quoth he, should my loue procure your *Feare*, My feare, quoth she, is wholly ingendred and deriued from your lust, but not from your *Loue*: I pray expresse your selfe, quoth he; she replies, my blushes may, but my tongue dares not: Quoth he, did your affection equalize mine: *La Hay* would accept of *De Salez*, and not refuse him, Nay quoth she, did *De Salez* know how infinite mine exceeds his, he would not refuse *La Hay*, but accept of her: Why quoth he, *de Salez* desires none but *La Hay*, Nor quoth she, *La Hay* any in the world but *de Salez*: Whereupon *de Salez* being prouoked with his owne lust, and animated and encouraged by her sweet speeches, he very ioyfully (yet falsly) flattering himselfe with the conquest of her fauour and consent, shuts the doore, and like a most laciuious and dissolute *Gentleman*, takes her in his armes, and striues to conuey her to the bed, reioluing there to inrich himselfe with more then kisses, yea, to reape the fruit of his beastly pleasures and obsceane and brutish desires; but his hopes shall deceiue him: For although *La Hay* be a Courtisan in heart, yet she will not be so in tongue,

tongue, especially now, where to get her selfe a rich husband, it behooues her to play her prise in *Chastity*, as if she were as vertuous, as faire, and as chast as louely; Wherefore exclayming, and storming at this his laciuious attempt and enterprise, leuelled at the defloration and shipwracke of her *Honour*, she with a violent power, and an enraged violence, vnskrewes her selfe forth his armes, and with a world of hypocriticall sighes and teares, flies to his Ponyard, which he had throwne on the table, and vnsheathing it, vowes that she will be a second *Lucretia*, and that if she cannot kill him before he haue defiled and defloured her, yet that she will assuredly murther her selfe after; because she is fully resolued, that her chastitie shall outliue her, not she her chastitie; A religious and *Honourable* resolution of hers, if it had proceeded from a chast and sanctified heart, but alas, nothing lesse; for she speakes it out of subtiltie, not out of *Vertue*, out of *Policie*, no way out of *Pietie*: *de Salez* by this time hauing wholly lost his iudgement in the sweet and roseat garden of her delicious complexion; vowes that he is now as deepely in loue with her chastity, as formerly with her beauty. When seeking to appease her *Choller*, and to pacifie her *Indignation*, as also to giue truce to his owne thoughts, and content to his desires; he sweares he is so farre from intending her any dishonour, as he is resolued to doe her all the honour of the world: Yea so farre, as if she please, he is ready to accept her for his wife, protesting, that of all the maydens of the world, he is desirous to be husband to none but her selfe, and that the fault shall be hers, if he make not his words deeds. *La Hay* hauing her thoughts tickled with delight, to heare the plea-

ſant melody of theſe his ſugred ſpeeches, doth there-at preſently bury her ſighes, and drie vp her teares: when throwing away the ponyard, and making him a moſt reſpectfull courtſie, and gratefull reuerence, ſhee with extended armes runnes to him, and hangs about his necke, vowing that ſhe loues no man in the world but himſelfe; and in conſenting to be her husband, ſhe wil till death yeeld, not only to be his faithfull wife in attending his pleaſures, but his obſeruant handmaid, to receiue and obey his commaunds: and ſo they interchangeably greet each other with thanks & kiſſes. But yet ſhee knowing that his father *Argentier* was both rich and eminent, and her owne poore and of a farre inferiour ranke, ſhee is ſo politike and ſubtill in the managing of this her affection, as ſhe is reſolued to make ſure worke, and to doe nothing by halfes: ſo as knowing that words are but wind, and what *de Salez* promiſeth her now, he may either forget or deny to morrow, ſhe intends to catch at opportunities forelocke, and ſo with a ſweet and ingenious inſinuation, drawes him to giue her a *Diamond* Ring in token of marriage, and ſhe in exchange returnes him a ſmall gold bracelet, which ſhee wore vpon her arme next her heart. And yet againe conſidering, that his father would very difficultly (or neuer) be drawen to conſent to this match, ſhe can giue no true content to her deſires, nor ſatisfaction to her feare, before ſhee haue vnited and linked him to her, in a more ſtricter and firmer bond of aſſurance; when not onely feaſting, but as it were ſurfetting him with varietie of kiſſes, ſhee bethinks her ſelfe of a *policy*, as worthy of her wit for attempting, as of his folly for performing: for directing him her ſpeech (which ſhee accompanied with

many

many amorous, yet diſſembling ſmiles) ſhe told him ſhe would futurely exceed him in conſtancy, and now outbraue him in affection; when taking pen and paper, ſhe writes him a faire promiſe, and firme aſſurance of her ſelfe vnto him (in the manner of a Contract) and to make it the more powerfull and authenticall, ſubſcribes her name and ſigne to it, and betwixt ſighs and bluſhing, ſhe deliuers it him; no way doubting, but rather aſſuring her ſelfe, that he would requite her with the like curteſie and obligation, as indeed the euent anſwereth her deſires and wiſhes: For *de Salez* hauing now no power left him to ſee by his owne eyes, I meane, by thoſe of his iudgement, but only by theſe of his intemperat paſſion, and paſſionat affection, he is ſo far from deſcrying (much leſſe from ſuſpecting) her policy, as very ſimply and ſottiſhly he attributes it to the feruency of her affection, the which he interprets and entertaines, I know not whether with more ioy, or delectation; and ſo vowing not to dye her debtor for *Courteſie*, he very raſhly, and inconſiderat-ly writes another to the ſame effect, and flyes ſo farre from wit or diſcretion, as to ſhew himſelfe her ſuperiour in affection, as well as in ſex, he purpoſely cuts his finger, and ſo firmes his name thereunto with his owne blood, and then with a million of kiſſes deliuers it her, vowing that her pleaſure ſhall be his law in the accompliſhing therof: only he prayes her for a time to be ſecret and ſilent heerein, for that he feares he ſhall hardly draw his Father to conſent hereunto, the which ſhe very courteouſly graunts him: and ſo he triumphing in her beauty, and ſhe in his wealth, he in her youth, and ſhe in his ſimplicity, they for that time part, not doubting but they ſhall ſhortly reape the

fruits of their matrimoniall desires and wishes, for till then, she sweares (though with an equiuocating reseruation to forsweare her selfe) she will liue a most pure and vnspotted Virgin, and that as the least of her affection and courtesie towards him, shall be smiles, so the most shall be kisses.

But this (affection or rather folly) of *De Salez*, in contracting himselfe to *La Hay*, is not so secretly borne, but as her former vnchastitie was a generall argument of talke to the whole citie of *Tholouse*: so now this of her subtilty and good fortune, is that of its vniuersall pratling and admiration, occasioned and redoubled by the opposite considerations of *Argentiers* knowen wealth, and *de Soulanges* supposed pouerty; and againe of *de Salez* supposed chastity, and of *de la Hayes* notoriously knowen whoredoms. And as *Fame* is still so tatling a goddesse, that events and accidents of this nature can hardly be concealed, and difficultie suppressed and smoothered: so by this time contrary to the expectations and hopes of our two young Louers, the old Councellor *Argentier* hath notice of this vnlooked-for newes, and of this vnwished for familiaritie betwixt his sonne, and that strumpet *La Hay*, when considering the great opposition betwixt *de Clugny's* Nobilitie and wealth, and *de Soulanges* meane extraction and pouertie; as also by a true and vncontroleable *Antithises*, comparing the foule and enormious vices of *La Hay* with the sweet and resplendant vertues of *La Frange*; he (as much disdayning that match, as desiring this for his sonne, very hastily sends for him into the Arbor, where purposely attending him, he with lightning in his lookes, and thunder in his speeches, layes before him the simplicity,

city, and the sottishnesse of his resolution, in preferring *La Hay* before *La Frange*, a strumpet before a virgin, and a Pedlers brat, before a rich gentlemans only daughter and heyre, shewes him the infamy of the first, and the glory of the last match; there his vnavoydable misery, here his assured happinesse; in the first his vtter ruine and shipwracke, and in the last, his infallible prosperity and felicity: and so intermixing threats with teares, with a passionate paternall affection, he endeauoreth to perswade him to leaue *La Hay*, and to marry *La Frange*; or if not, hee vowes and sweares wholly to disinherit him, and from thenceforth neuer repute or esteeme him for his sonne. But *de Salez* his fooliſh vanity, and vaine affection in himselfe towards his new contracted Loue *La Hay*, is so great, and consequently his filiall obedience to his father so small, as notwithstanding this his wholesome aduise and counsell, he is still resolute and constant to preferre *La Hay* before *La Frange*, the beauty of the one, before the deformity of the other, his owne content before his fathers, and *Soulanges* estate and byrth before the great wealth and noble extraction of *De Clugny*: but this rashnes, indiscretion, and ingratitude of his will cost him deare.

Now if *Argentier* haue perfect intelligence and curious notice of his sonns familiarity with that faire yet lewd Courtezan *La Hay*, no lesse hath *la Frange*, who poore soule is so deeply enamoured of *de Salez*, as the very first newes & conceyt, that another should enioy him, and not her selfe, for very griefe and sorrow, shee seemes to drowne her selfe in the deluge of her teares. His father is chollerick therat, she mournfull; he incensed, she afflicted; he inraged, and she perplexed

plexed and tormented; his passions & anger proceeds from suspition, that he shall so soone find a daughter in law in *la Hay*; her sighes and teares from feare, that she shall so soone loose her Loue, though not her Louer, his sonne *de Salez*. Againe, the argument of his choller, is *la Hayes* vnchastitie and povertie, and the cause of her disconsolation, *de Salez* his wealth and vertues: likewise she sees that *Argentier* hath no reason to hope, that his sonne will marry her selfe, such is her deformitie; and againe, that he hath all the reasons of the world, as well to doubt, as feare, that hee will wed *la Hay*, such is her beauty: But sith *de Salez* will beare no more respect to his father, nor affection to *la Frange*, leaue we therfore his father *Argentiers* passions, and *la Franges* perplexities, to bee appeased and qualified by *Time*, or rather by *God*, the Authour and giuer of *Time*, who out of his all-seeing prouidence and sacred pleasure, onely knowes in Heauen, how best to dispose and manage the actions of earth; and so come wee to other vnexpected occurrents and euents, which like so many entersecting, and interuening poynts, are contained within the circumference of this *History*.

I haue so long insisted on the affections of *de Salez* and *la Hay*, as but to the iudicious and temperat Reader it would seeme to appeare, that the *Baron* of *Vaumartin* hath wholly forgotten to remember his to his Lady *La Frange*: But to put that doubt out of question, and this question out of doubt, we shal see him returne too too soone, to act a part not so religious and honourable, as bloody, vpon the *Theatre* of this *History*: For by this time both his creditors & his debts are growen so clamorous, and his reputation & lands so

so neere forfeited, for want of disingaging, as to secure the one, and prouide for the other, he knowes no other inuention nor meanes, but to gaine *La Frange* to his wife: when, as it were, prouoked and precipitated on by the necessity of this exigent, his thoughts leane heauen to fly to hell, and consequently fly from *God* to Sathan, to consult how either by the bye, or the mayne hee may obtaine her; yea, though with the perill and hazard of his owne life, to cut off theirs, who seeke therein to preuent his desires and designes. In which hellish ratiocynation, he as deuoyd of *Reason*, as that is exempt either of *Grace* or *Pietie*, thus reasoneth with himselfe: *De Clugny* hates me, for seeking to marry his daughter, and that time may remedy for me; but which is worst of all, shee loues *De Salez*, and seekes and desires to marry him, and this I must remedy in time, if I euer expect to obtaine or enioy her; and so resolues to make him away: but is as yet irresolute how to perpetrate, and in what manner to finish so execrable a businesse. But this is not onely the voyce of his malice, but the sentence of his reuenge, that *De Salez* must die: wretched *Vaumartin*, vnworthy to beare the name of a man, much lesse of a *Baron*, but least of all of a *Christian*, in that because *De Salez* hates *La Frange*, & she loues him, that therefore thou wilt not loue but hate him; or because shee loues him, and not thy selfe, that therefore thou wilt kill him, that she may loue thee. See, see, rash and inconsiderate *Nobleman*, how treacherously the Deuill hath hood-wink'd, yea inueigled thy iudgment, & besotted thy senses, to kill one that loues thee, to kill I say, a *Gentleman* who hath not offended thee, but is euery way thy friend, no way thine enemy: or if thou thinke

thinke it wisdome, that couetousnesse must redeeme thy former prodigality, *alas, alas*, canst thou yet be so cruell, to thinke it eyther lawfull or religious, that future murther should either occasion or authorize it: But the Deuill hath so farre preuayled with his impious resolutions, that againe he resolues, *De Salez* must dye: and yet thou thinkest poyson as vnworthy of him, as he is worthy of thy sword; so had thy last resolution been answerable to thy first, assure thy selfe thou hadst made thy selfe more happy, and not so miserable: for as poysoning was the inuention of the deuill, and is practised by none but his agents; so this dishonourable poynt of honour to fight Duels, was neuer instituted by *God*, nor professed by those who really professe his *Gospell*: yea, it is not onely truly to dishonour *God*, in seeking falsly to preserue our owne *Honour* and reputation, but wee assuredly stab at the *Maiestie* of the *Creator*, in seeking to deface man his creature; and to vse but a word, as it is repugnant both to *Nature* and *Grace*, so though it begin in the heat of passion and pleasure, it many times terminates in Repentance, but still in true Infamy and misery.

But *Vaumartins* faith being so strong with *Sathan*, and so weake with his *Sauiour*, he will not take law from *Religion* to giue to his *Enuy*, but rather takes one from his *Enuy* to giue to his *Religion*; and so very prophanely and rashly by his Lackey *La Rose*, sends *De Salez* this Challenge:

IF thou seeke the cause of my malice, thou mayest finde it in the Lady La Franges *affection to thee, and hatred to my selfe: wherefore hold it not strange, that I now command my pen to inuite thee and thy sword to meete me in*

murther

morrow on horse-backe without Seconds, 'twixt fiue and sixe in the morning, behind the Iacobins *garden.* Loue *and* Valour *thou knowest, are neuer capable of much expostulation; as desirous rather to be tryed in action, then seene in words. Could that sweete* Lady, *(who will not bee mine, because thou art hers) haue affected me more, or thee lesse, wee mought haue prooued as true friends, as now our reputations coniure vs eyther to liue or dye,* Honourable *Enemies.*

VAVMARTIN.

De Salez hauing receiued and read this Challenge, doth not a little wonder at the *Baron* of *Vaumartins* strange passion and resolution, in sending it him, especially, sith hee knowes that the motiues and grounds of his malice were so vniust and friuolous: so, how to answere him, as yet he knowes not; for as his Generositie one way inuites him to fight, so his discretion another way perswades him from it: But considering the poore esteeme he makes either of the Lady *La Frange*, or her affection, thinking it folly to fight without cause, and to hazard his life without reason, hee calls for pen and paper, and as a wise, yet valiant Gentleman, by his owne Lackey, returnes the *Baron* of *Vaumartin* this answer:

I *Haue seene many* Challenges, *but none of the* Nature *of thine now sent mee: for to write thee the truth, the grounds and foundations thereof are vniust, false, or both: for bring but the eyes of thy Iudgement, and not of thy passion, to bee Iudge and Vmpier betwixt vs, and thou shalt both see and finde, that I not onely disclaime the Lady* La Franges *affection, but her selfe; sith I appertaine to ano-*

ther, and shee shall neuer to meet. I heere shew thee my loue through this true Prospective of my heart, which if it will not satisfie thy malice, then know that my meake Valour is neither capable nor desirous of further expostulation, then that my Sword *is as willing to bring thee deedes, as thy* Pen *was to send mee words: for either single, or with Second, either on foot or horseback, I will still be ready to giue reason to those, who will not relish, nor receiue any but their owne: and in this resolution of mine, I know I shall either liue with* Reputation, *or dye with* Honour.

DE SALEZ.

Vaumartin hauing receiued and perused this letter of refusall from *De Salez*, hee out of the heat of his passion, and height of his folly, reputes it rather to cowardise, then discretion in him; and so his courage and reuenge the more insulting and inflam'd thereat, hee bending his browes (as if *Contempt* and *Enuy* sate wreath'd in the furrowes therof) very speedily againe returnes him his Lackey, with this rash answer:

THy Answer giues mee no satisfaction, sith I know that to deny thy affection to the Lady la Frange, *is to deny the light of the* Sunne *in his brightest and hottest* Meridian; *neither are the grounds or foundations of my* Challenge *eyther vniust or false, as thou in thy false Prospective endeauourest to make mee see or beleeue: for being ignorant who is thy* Mistris, *I know thou resoluest to make no* Lady *of the world thy wife but* La Frange, *so as I cannot rightly define whether thy proceeding with me be more subtill or malicious, or to what end thou shouldest attempt the one, or practise the other towards me, vnlesse out of a premeditated resolution and purpose, thereby to make thy*

glory

glory *the more apparent and conspicuous in my* shame: *Wherfore sith thy friendship is false to me, I must, nay I will see if thy valour will proove true to thy selfe, and whether the effects of thy Sword be as great in substance, as the vanity of thy Pen depaynts them, in shew and ostentation: So my* Challenge *is still my Resolution, and the performance thereof must bee thine, except thou resolue to liue with as much Infamy, as the conclusion of thy Letter promiseth thou art ready to dye with* reputation *and* Honour. VAVMARTIN.

De Salez hauing receiued and runne ouer this Letter, and seeing that *Vaumartin* was still wilfull and resolute to fight, thinks that he should degenerat from himselfe, his Blood, and Profession, if he did not now accept and answere this his Challenge: wherefore calling for *Vaumartins* Lackey, he rounds him thus in his eare, *Tell thy Master, that if I liue, I will not fayle to breake fast with him timely in the morning, according to his expectation.* Thus we see these two inconsiderate *Gentlemen* agreed, their match concluded, & nothing but the night to hinder them from fighting, as if their glory consisted in their shame, and as if *Nature* had neuer taught them how to preserue their liues, nor *Grace*, their soules.

So the Morne peeping forth through the windows of *Heauen*, as soone as the *Sunne* with his glistering beames began to salute the woods and mountaines, our two resolute *Champions* brauely mounted with each his *Chirurgeon*, are in the field at the assignd Rendeuous, and first comes *Vaumartin*, and then immediately *De Salez*, whē their *Chirurgeons* performing the dutie and office of Seconds, being some hundred pa-

ces distant, they giue spurres to their Steeds, and so drawing their swords, swiftly part, like two flashes of lightning each towards other. At their first meeting, *de Salez* giues *Vaumartin* the first hurt in the right shoulder, and hee *de Salez* another in requitall, in the right side of the neck: whē being both good *Caualiers*, (& well neere as equal in yeres as courages) they turne short, and then fall to it againe with brauery and resolution, when againe *Vaumartin* runs *de Salez* through his left arme of a deepe and wide wound, and he onely sleightly cuts his shirt vpon his ribbes, giuing him onely a raze or scarre, but as yet both free from any danger of death, so they mutually consent to breath: but their ambitions and courages of both sides, are so exasperated and inflamed, as although they are all bloody, yet this will not suffice: so they fall to it again, and in this close *de Salez* his horse stumbles with him; whereat *Vaumartin* (though a dwarfe in stature, yet not in Valour and Policy) taking the aduantage of this accident, giues him first a licke ore his pate, and then runnes him at the short ribbes: but *de Salez* raysing vp his horse, prooued fauourable to him; for by that meanes *Vaumartins* sword met and glaunced on a rib, without doing him any farther hurt. *De Salez* seeing the redoubling of his wounds, beginnes to redouble his courage, and disdaining thus to bee outbraued and beaten by a *Pygmey*, he lyes home at *Vaumartin*, and at their very next close, runnes him thorow the body, of a deepe and mortall wound, a little aboue his nauell: whereat his sword presently falles out of his hand to the ground, and hee immediately likewise from his horse starke dead, without hauing the grace or happinesse, either to call on, or to name

God.

God. O what pitie, what misery is it, that a *Christian* should dye like a beast, hauing neither power to pray, nor felicitie to repent. Thus we see the Challenger kill'd, and he who would haue murthered a stranger, murthered himselfe by a stranger: a Lesson to teach others to beware, by the *Tragicall* and mournfull end of this rash Nobleman. *De Salez* seeing *Vaumartin* dead, praiseth *God* for his victory; and so leauing his breathlesse corps to his sorrowfull *Chirurgion*, he gallops away to the next Village, where hee causeth his wounds to bee dressed, and from thence prouides for his safetie.

All *Tholouse* rings and resounds of this dissasterous and *Tragicall* accident: *De Clugny* is glad, that *De Salez* hath escaped death, yet sorrowfull that *Vaumartin* is kill'd, in respect hee feares hee vndertooke this quarrell for his daughter *La Franges* sake: who hearing that *De Salez* wounds are no way mortall, infinitely reioyceth, and triumpheth thereat, flattering her selfe (though with this false hope) that he affected her farre more dearer then he made shew of, or else that he would neuer haue fought with *Vaumartin* for her sake, nor haue kill'd him but for his owne. And thus, though humanitie made her grieue for *Vaumartins* death, yet that griefe of hers was as suddenly conuerted into ioy, when she saw he receiued it by the hand of *De Salez*, whom shee respected and affected more dearer then all the Gentlemen of the world. Now, as for his father *Argentier* the life of his sonne likewise wiped off the remembrance of *Vaumartins* death, and yet it grieued him inwardly, that hee to whome hee gaue life, should giue death to another: and farre the more, in that this vnfortunate accident

must now enforce him to beg pardon from that graue *Court* of *Parliament*, for this murther perpetrated by his sonne, sith he had formerly so often pleaded for iustice against others, for the like crime and offence; But all these ioyes of *Argentier*, *De Clugny*, and his daughter *La Frange*, are nothing to those of *La Hay* for the life and victory of her deare *De Salez*: leaping as it were for meere content and pleasure, that shee should shortly see, and enioy him for her husband, and that God hath both reserued, and preserued him to crowne her with the sweetnesse of this desired felicitie.

Thus while *La Frange* and *La Hay* triumph and congratulate the returne of *De Salez*, so *Argentier* publikely, and *De Clugny* priuately, imploy there chiefest power, friends and authoritie, to procure his pardon first from the King, then from the *Parliament*, whereof they are two famous members. Which at last, (by the meanes and fauour of the *Duke* of *Ventadour*) they obtaine: So this murther of his, is remitted in Earth, but I feare me, will not be forgotten in *Heauen*, for though men be inconstant in their decrees, yet God will be firme and vpright, aswell in the distribution, as execution of his iudgements. Men as they are men may erre, but as they are *Christians* they should not; but God (either to please or displease them) neither can nor will.

De Salez no sooner hath escaped this danger, but forgetting his former follies, and his fathers aduise & house, he againe, in a manner voluntarily imprisoneth himself with his mistris *La Hay* in hers; wherat as his father stormes, so *De Clugny*, and *La Frange* bite the lip: hoping that this good office in procuring him his

pardon

pardon, would more ſtrictly haue vnited him to her ſelfe, and conſequently ſequeſtred him from *La Hay*; but nothing leſſe, for he ſings his old tune, and will rather run the hazard of his fathers diſpleaſure, then leaue *La Hay* to take *La Frange*: whereat his father *Argentier* reneweth his choller, and reuiues his indignation againſt him, as deſiring nothing ſo much in this life, as to ſee him married to *La Frange*, but he ſhall neuer liue to ſee it; for there are too many diſaſterous accidents preparing to croſſe and preuent it:

Whiles theſe things happen in *Tholouſe*, there betides an vnexpected and vnwiſhed buſineſſe, which muſt call away *Argentier* to *Paris*: For the Lords of the Priuie Councell of *France*, hauing receiued ſome informations and grieuances againſt the body of the Court of *Parliament* of *Tholouſe*; commaund them ſpeedily to ſend vp ſome Deputies to anſwere ſuch matters as ſhall be obiected againſt them: whereupon, the grauitie and wiſedome of that Court, in obedience to their ſuperiours, elect two *Preſidents* and foure Counſellours to vndertake that iourney and buſineſſe among whom *De Clugny* is choſen for one of the *Preſidents*, and *Argentier* for one of the Counſellours: as indeed their integritie and profound *Wiſedome* and *Experience* had made them eminent in that Court. As for *de Clugny* at his importunate requeſt (made to the Court) he was diſpenced with, from that iourney; by alleadging that his age and ſickeneſſe made him altogether vnfit to vndertake it: but all the euaſions and excuſes, which *Argentier* could make, could not exempt him, but he muſt needs ſee *Paris*. But firſt, before his departure he had a long

and

and serious conference with *de Clugny*, how to effect the so long desired match of his sonne and daughter, the finishing whereof was referred till his returne from *Paris*, which sweet newes infinitely reioyced and delighted the young Ladie *La Frange*, and the immediate night before he was to take Coach, hee calls his sonne *de Salez* to him, and with a perswasiue and powerfull speech, requested him in his absence to loue *La Frange*, which he in plaine teatmes protested and vowed to his father, he could not, then hee coniures him, neuer to mary *La Hay*, which likewise he would not grant; and to conclude, sith his father could not preuaile in the two former, he commanded him vpon his blessing, that he would neuer marry any wife whatsoeuer without his consent, the which indeed *de Salez* could not denie, but faithfully promised his father; yea, and bound it with an oath, yet still hoping, that it was as possible for him to draw his father to consent he should marry *La Hay*, as it was as impossible for his father euer to perswade him to marry *La Frange*: and so that night the father takes leaue of the sonne, and he the next morning of his father, wishing him a prosperous iourney, and a speedy returne: who suspecting, and fearing, that in his absence, contrary to his requests and prayers, his *Sonne* would only abandone *La Frange*, to frequent *La Hay*; he being arriued to the Citie of *Tours*, thought himselfe bound in *Nature*, aswell for his owne content, as his sonnes tranquilitie and prosperitie; againe, to signifie him his mind in some few lines of aduise and counsell, and to send it him by the ordinary Carrier of *Tholouse*; which was then in that Citie, bound thither from *Paris*: his letter spake thus.

It

IT is out of a fatherly, & (as I may say) a religious care of thy good, that I now send thee these few ensuing lines, for thy Youth *cannot see that which my* Age *knows, how many miseries are subiect, to wait & attend on* Vice, *and how many blessings on* Vertue; *if* La Frange *be not faire, yet she is comely, not contemptible: but sith her defects of* Nature *are so richly recompensed with the Ornaments of* Fortune, *and the excellencies of* Grace; *why should thy affection preferre* La Hay *before her, who hath nothing but a painted face to ouernaile the deformitie of her other vices? If thou wilt leaue a* Saint *to marry a strumpet, then take* La Hay, *and forsake* La Frange; *but if thou forsake a strumpet to take a* Saint, *then marry* La Frange *and leaue* La Hay, *for look what difference there is betweene their births, thou shalt find ten times more betweene the chastitie of the one, and the leuitie of the other: If thou espouse the first, thou shalt find* Content *and* Honour; *if the second shame and repentance: for I know not whether* La Frange *will bring thee more happinesse, or* La Hay *misery. This letter shall serue as a witnesse betwixt* God, *my selfe, and thee; that if thou performe me not thy promise and oath, I will denie thee my blessing, and deprive thee of my lands.*

ARGENTIER.

De Salez hauing receiued this his fathers letter in *Tholouse*, exceedingly grieues to see him disgrace his mistresse, by the scandalous name of a strumpet, which he knowes she is not, and therefore will neuer beleeue it; yea, he vowes, that if it were any other in the world, who had offered him that intollerable affront, he would reuenge it, though with the price and perill of his life; *La Hay* perceiues this discontent and

alteration of mirth in him, but from what point of the Compasse this wind proceeds, she neither knowes, nor as yet can conceiue: but withall, determineth to make the discouery thereof her greatest *Ambition*, and not her least *Care*; which she now well knowes it behooues her to doe, sith she finds *De Salez* lesse free, and more reserued and pensiue in her speeches then accostomed: But when in vaine she had hereunto vsed many smiles and fetches, loe heere falls out an vnlook't for accident, which bewrayes her the very pith and quintescence of the *Misterie*: For on a time, when he lay slumbering on the table, shee as accustomed, diuing into his pockets for sweet meats, or rather for gold (of both which, he many times went well furnished) she finds his fathers (aforesaid) letter, which she knew by the direction; and so flying into another chamber, and bolting the doore after her, she there reads it both with griefe and choller; when stunge to the quicke, and bitten to the heart and gall, to see her reputation and *Honour* thus traduced and scandalized by the father of her pretended husband; she with teares and interiected sighes and grones, flies backe to *De Salez*, and holding the letter in her hand, like a dessembling and impious strumpet as she was, there shewes it him, takes *Heauen* and *Earth* to beare witnesse of her innocency, and of the irreparable and extreame wrong his father hath offered her, in seeking to ecclips the *Glory* of her chastitie, which she sweares she will beare pure and vnspotted, not onely to his bed, but to her owne graue. But *Alas, alas*, these are the effects and passions of dissimulation, not of truth, of her prophaneneſſe, not of her pietie, which time will make apparant to *De Salez*; though now her beautie

beautie and teares be so predominate with his iudgement and folly, as he cannot, because he will not see it: So being still as constant in his sottishnesse, as she in her hypocrisie; he giues her many sweet kisses, and with a Catalogue of sugred words, seekes to appease and comfort her, whom he hath farre more reason to execrate and curse. But for her part, her heart is not so afflicted, for resembling her selfe, still her wits are her owne, and so remembring the conclusion of the letter, and fearing that *De Salez* his promise and oath to his father, might infringe and contradict his to her, she tels him, that her loue is so feruent and infinite towards him, as she can giue no intermission, nor truce to her teares, before he reueale her his oath and promise, which his fathers letter informed her he had formerly made him.

De Salez seeing himselfe put to so strict an exigent and push, doth both blush for shame, and againe looke pale for anger, when for a small time, irresolute how to beare himselfe in a matter of this different *Nature*, wherin he must either violate his obedience to his father, or infringe his fidelity and honour to his mistris; he at last (consenting with folly, not with discretion, and with *Vanitie*, not with *Iudgement*) doth so adore her beauty, and commiserate her teares, as he sottishly reueales her his oath, giuen his father (*Verbatim* as we haue formerly vnderstood it) adding withall, that she hath farre more reason to reioyce, then grieue hereat; That a little time shall cancell his said late promise and oath to his father, and confirme his former to her: For sweet *La Hay* (quoth he) come what come will, two moneths shall neuer passe, ere I marry thee, when sealing his speeches with many kisses,

our hypocriticall afflicted *Gentlewoman* is presently a-gaine come to her selfe, and in all outward appearance, her discontents are remoued, her choller pacified, her teares exhaled, and her sighes euaporated and blowen away.

But all this is false, like her selfe, and treacherous like her beautie; For this letter of *Argentier* to his sonne, and his promise and oath to his father, hath acted such wonders in her heart, and imprinted such extrauagancies in her thoughts, as she cannot easily remoue or supplant it, nor difficultly forget or deface it, whatsoeuer she speake or make shew of to the contrary, for thus she reasoneth with her selfe: That her whoredomes are already reuealed to *Argentier*, and for any thing she knowes, may likewise be discouered to his sonne, how closely soeuer she either act or conceale them. That *La Franges* descent, wealth, and vertues, will in the end ouerprise and weigh downe her meane extraction, pouerty and beauty; and in the end, that the wisedome of the father, will infallibly triumph ore the folly of the sonne, except her policy interpose, and her vigilency preuent it; which to preuent and effect, she sees no other obstacle to her content, nor barre to her preferment, but only *La Frange*: for, quoth she, if *La Frange* shine in the firmament of *De Salez* affection, *La Hay* must set; or if *La Hay* will shine, *La Frange* must set: againe, if she fall not, I cannot stand, and if she stand, I must needs fall; and as the skie is not capable of two sunnes, so both of vs cannot shine in the *Horison* of his heart and thoughts at once: except thus, that *La Hay* may liue to see *La Frange* his wife, and her selfe his strumpet, when burning with false zeale to *De Salez*, and true inueterate

malice

malice to *La Frange*, she forgetting God, swaps a bargaine with the diuell, that *La Frange* must first goe to her graue, ere *La Hay* come to his bed, and so resolues to sacrifice her as a *Victime* to her malice and iealousie, and to send her out of this world in an vntimely and bloody Coffin; Hellish *Aphorismes*, Infernall *Positions*, odious to *Earth*, and execrable to *Heauen*.

For wretched & impious strumpet, wilt thou needs not onely gallop, but flie to hell, and so redouble thy crimes purposely to redouble thy torments, as first of whoredome, then of murther: Wretched, yea thrice wretched woman, how dareſt thou see earth, or thinke of heauen; when thy acted crimes are so odious, and thy pretended ones so monstrous, as thou deseruest to be shut foorth of the one, and spewed out of the other: For *alas*, consider what this poore *Gentlewoman* hath done to thee, that thou shouldest doe this to her; She beares the image of *God*, and wilt thou therefore beare that of the diuell to destroy her: Ah me, where is thy religion, thy conscience, thy soule; that thou wilt thus hellishly imbathe thy hands in her blood, and embrue thy heart in her murther; If it be not that her vertues cry fie on thy *Vices*, thou hast no reason in *Nature*, and lesse in *Grace*, to attempt a deed so Tragicall, an act so inhumane and execrable: But rest assured, that if thou proceed and finish this infernall and bloody stratageme of thine, although thou chance goe vnpunished of men; yet the *Lord* (in his due time) will finde thee out, and both seuerely scourge, and sharpely reuenge and chastice thee.

The effects of malice, and reuenge in men, are finite; in women infinite, theirs may haue bounds and

ends, but these none, or at least, seldome and difficultly: for hauing once conceiued these two monsters in their fantasies and braines, they long til they are deliuered and disburthened of them; and soto bring their abortiue issue to perfection, they (for the most part) are sharpe and seuere in their designes, and sudden and malicious in their executions, hating all delayes, so it bee not to doe euill: So this our bloodie and vitious Strumpet *La Hay*, is resolute to aduaunce, and not to retyre in this diabolicall businesse of hers. Of all kind of violent deaths, shee thinks none either so sure & secret as poyson; whether she consider the manner, or the matter: If the Deuill himselfe had not inuented this vnparaleld cruelty, his agents and members had neuer knowen how to haue administred and practised it. But hauing resolued on the drug and ingrediens, she now bethinkes her selfe of some hellish Empericke or Factor of Hell, to apply and giue it her, and her inueterate and implacable hatred making her curious in the research and inquiry thereof: shee is at last aduertised, that there is an old *Italian Empericke* in *Mompellier*, tearmed *S. Bernardo Michaele*, who is his *Arts* master in that infernall profession, when wholly concealing this mysterie and businesse from *De Salez*, shee by a second meanes, (with promise of store of gold) sends away for *Michaele* from *Mompellier*: who in hope thereof, packs vp his drugges and trinkets, and within three dayes arriues at *Tholouse*; where she thinkes no where so fit and secret as the Church to consult and resolue on this bloody busines, the houre is eight the next morn, and the place the *Cordeliers* (or *Gray Friers*) Church, appoynted and agreed on betwixt them, where they both

both meet. But shee (the better to disguise her selfe, and to bleare the eyes of the world) wraps her selfe about in a great furred cloake, and muffles her selfe vp with a large coyfe of veluet, and a rich taffata scarfe ouer it, as if she were some graue and reuerend old Matron: so being brought to each others presence, they being both on their knees, he to his Book, and shee to her Beads, shee proposeth him the poysoning of *La Frange*, daughter to the *President de Clugny*, for the which shee promiseth to giue him three hundred crownes of the Sunne to performe it; whereof he shall now haue one in hand, and the other two when he hath dispatched her. *Michaele* like a limbe of the Deuill, being deeply in loue, and allured with this gold, vndertakes it; when swearing secrecy, and withall to performe it within ten dayes, she giues him the hundred crownes tyed vp in her handkercher, and so for that time they part.

Good *God*, what prophane *Christians*, what monsters of *Nature*, and Deuils incarnate by profession are these, thus to pollute and defile the Church ordain'd for prayer, with the price and sale of innocent blood, a most prodigious and hellish impietie, since there is no sinne so odious or execrable to *God*, as that which is masked with pietie, and ouerwayled with the cloke of sanctitie? And what a damnable yong strumpet, and old villaine are they, in so holy a place to treate and conclude so hellish a businesse? But beware, for the sword and arrow of *Gods* iust reuenge, and reuenging Iustice, threatens yee with no lesse, then vtter confusion and destruction.

La Hay infinitely glad of this agreement, returnes from the Church, and *Michaele* as glad of her gold, (being

(being informed of *La Franges* deformity, and to loſe no time) trips away towards *Preſident de Clugny* his houſe, taking that for a fit occaſion to aſſay to make his daughter become his Patient, and he her *Empericke:* who fleeringly inſinuating, and skrewing himſelfe into his knowledge and acquaintance, (in which profeſſion the *Emperickes* and *Mountebanks* of *Italy*, come no way ſhort, but rather exceed all other Nations of the world) he proffers him his beſt ſeruice and skill, to redreſſe and reforme the body of the young Lady his daughter, adding withall (thereby to adde the more beliefe and credit to his ſpeeches) that he is ſo farre from diſpayring or doubting, as he is very confident thereof: and in the phraſes and myſteries of his profeſſion, giues him in outward appearance many inward and plauſible reaſons to induce him to beleeue it. The good old *Preſident* who preferring the cure of his daughter before any other earthly reſpect; hauing heard of *Michaeles* fame: begins to reliſh his reaſons, and yet not ignorant that the *Mountbanckes* and *Charletans* of *Italy*, are Couſin *Germanes* to the *Alcumiſts* of *France*, who promiſe to make gold of droſſe, and yet only bring forth droſſe for gold, he holds it fit to take a conſultation of the learneſt *Phyſicians*, and expert *Chirurgians* of the City, whereunto *Michaele* willingly conſents, ſo they ſit, being ſixe in number, *Michaele* deliuers them his reaſons to redreſſe the deformity of this young Ladies body (the *Preſident* her father being preſent) whoſe reaſons are heard, and controuerted of all ſides betwixt them, the concluſion is, foure are of opinion that this cure is repugnant to the grounds of *Phyſicke*, and the principles of *Chirurgery*, and therfore

fore impossible to be effected: the other two are of a contrary iudgement, and held it feasable, and that many times God blesseth the Art and labours of a man, not onely beyond expectation, but also beyond hope and reason: so *De Clugny* seeing that these two with *Michaele* were three against foure, he in respect of the tender care and affection he bore his daughter, resolues to employ him, and giues him an hundred double Pistollets in hand to attempt it, with promise of as much more when hee hath performed it; whereof this miscreant and hellish Empericke *Michaele* being exceedingly glad, he betakes himselfe to his businesse, visits the young Lady, who promiseth him to redouble her fathers summe, if he make her body straight: when to reduce his impious contemplation, into infernall action, he outwardly applieth playsters and seare-clothes to her body, and inwardly administreth her pills and potions; and (O griefe to write it) therein infuseth deadly poyson, which hee knowes at the end of ten dayes will assuredly make a diuorce betweene her body and soule; and so send that to the death of this world, and this to the life of that to come: So this sweete and innocent *Lady* (wishing good to her selfe, and hurt to none in the world) first finds a giddinesse & swimming in her head; and within some six dayes after (in which time the poyson had dispersed it selfe throughout all the veynes and pores of her body) many sharpe gripes, and bitter throwes and convulsions, whereat her father grieues, and shee weepes; onely that graceless villaine her *Empericke*, bids them bee of good comfort, and that the more paine and griefe she suffered, the better and speedyer hope there was of her cure; but yet inwardly in his

deuilliſh heart, knowes that the poyſon effectually operated and wrought with her as hee deſired and expected, and that by theſe infallible ſignes and ſymptomes, his patient drew neere towards the period of her end. Whereupon he repaires ſecretly to *La Hay*, and bids her prouide the reſt of his mony; for that *La Frange* could not poſſibly liue two dayes to an end, whereat ſhe tryumphing and reioycing with much alacrity, againe promiſeth it him: and indeed the helliſh Art of this execrable *Empericke* doth not now deceiue him, though in the end the malice of the deuill his Doctor will: For iuſt as the tenth day was expired, this harmeleſſe ſweet young Lady dyes, to the incomparable and vnſpeakable griefe of the good old *Preſident* her father; for that ſhe was the ſtaffe of his age, and the chiefe and onely comfort of his life, who diſconſolatly and mournfully ſeemed to drown himſelfe in his teares hereat, curſing the houre that he firſt ſaw this accurſed Empericke *Michaele*, who had robbed him of his onely ioy and delight, of his deare and ſweete daughter *La Frange*. But this murdrous *Michaele* hauing learnt of the deuill to feare no colours, meanes not to ſtep a foot from *Tholouſe*, and ſo ſends priuately for *La Hay*, of whom he craues the performance of her promiſe, for that (quoth he) hee had performed his. Why (quoth *La Hay*) is that crookbackt dwarfe *La Frange* dead? She is gone (quoth *Michaele*) to her eternall reſt: when *La Hay* not able to retaine her ſelfe for exceſſe of ioy, runs to him, gines him the other hundred crownes, together with many kiſſes, which take (quoth ſhe) as a pledge of my continuall good wil towards thee, when again ſwearing ſecreſie, they both take leaue each of other, and part.

The

The newes of *La Franges* death, ratleth and resoundeth ouer all *Tholouse*, her kinsefolkes grieue at it, her friends lament it, and all who eyther know her, or her fame, bewayle it, onely *De Salez*, and execrable *La Hay* excepted, who knowing her to haue beene the onely stop and hinderance of their mariage, they are so rauished with ioy heereat, as they seeme to contest and enuy each other, who shall first bring the newes hereof each to other: yea, the excesse of *De Salez* his ioy is as boundlesse, as that of *La Hayes* delight, so that he seemes to flye to her to her fathers house, where shee with out-spread armes receiues and entertaines him; and there they mutually congratulate each other for this her death, he affirming, and she beleeuing, that *La Frange* being gone to heauen, it shall not bee long ere the Church make them man and wife on earth. In the meane time, hee being wholly ignorant of her poysoning, and yet the olde *President* her father, and the rest of her friends suspecting it, they cause her body to be opened: and although they finde no direct poyson, yet remarking a little kind of yellow tincture on her heart and liuer, as also some shew thereof through her frozen veines: They cause *Michaele* to be apprehended and imprisoned, and so procure a Decree from the *Parliament* to haue him rack'd: At the newes wherof, *La Hay* is extreamely tormented and perplexed, as well foreseeing and knowing, that her life lay at the mercy of his tongue: wherfore to fortifie his secrecie, and therby to secure her owne feare & danger, she by a confident friend of his, sends him a hundred French crownes more, and promiseth him to giue him a rich *Diamond* worth as much againe; who (as before) being ex-

treamely couetous, and the Deuill (resembling himselfe) still harping to him on that string which most delights him, his heart is so deuillishly obdurated, and his fortitude so armed and prepared, as his patience and constancy not onely endures, but outbraues the crueltie of his torments, and so he is acquitted of this his pretended crime: but he hath not as yet made his peace with God.

And now is *De Salez* resolued to make a Iourney to *Paris*, to draw his fathers consent that he may marry *La Hay*, but the wisedome of the father shall anticipate the folly of the *Sonne*, for he hauing heard in *Paris* of *La Franges* death, and still fearing, that because of his frequent familiarity with that strumpet *La Hay*, he will in the end marry her. He in *Paris* buyes a Captaines place for him in the *Regiment* of the *Kings* Guard, and likewise dealt with a very rich Counsellour of that *Court* of *Parliament*, named *Monsieur de Brianson*, that his sonne may marry his eldest daughter: *Madamoyselle de Plessis*, a very sweet and faire young *Gentlewoman*; and the old folkes are already agreed on all conditions, onely it rests, that the yong, sees and loue; To which end *Argentier* writes away with all speed to *Tholouse* for his sonne *De Salez* to come vp to him, who before he had receiued his fathers letter, (as we haue formerly vnderstood) was ready to vndertake that Iourney: *La Hay* infinitely fearefull and ielous to lose her pray, with *Crocodile* teares in her eyes, and *Hyena* aspects in her lookes, informes *De Salez*, that she feareth that his father hath prouided a wife for him in *Paris*, but he vowes and sweares to her, that neither his father, nor the whole world, shall make him marry any other then her selfe, and

and so after many embraces and kisses, he takes horse and leaues [illegible].

Being arriued at *Paris*, his father very ioyfully bids him welcome, and referres to conferre with him till the next morning; but such is *De Salex* rashnesse and folly, as hee hath no sooner supped in company of his father, but he prayes to speake with him. When the seruants voyding the chamber, he earnestly and humbly beseeching him, that sith *La Frange* is dead, he will now be pleased that he may marry *La Hay*, whom, quoth he, I onely affect and loue before all the maides of the world: His father exceedingly incensed hereat, vowes that he had rather see him fairely buried in his graue, and that of all the females of the world, he shall not marry *La Hay*: and so for that night they betake themselues to their beds, the father grieues with his sonnes folly, the sonnes with his fathers auersnesse: The next morne *Argentier* calles for his sonne. When the doores shut, he bids him shut his eyes to his fooliish familiarity with *La Hay*, and now to open them to the preferment, he hath purchased him, and so relates him how he hath procured him the honour of a *Captaines* place, in the *Regiments* of the Kings Guard, as also a very faire young *Gentlewoman* for his wife, tearmed *Madamoyselle de Plessis*, the eldest daughter of *Monsieur de Brianson*, one of the richest Counsellours of *Paris*: But *De Salex* hauing his eyes and thoughts wholly fixed on *La Hay*, with a discontented looke, returnes his father this peruerse and disobedient replie.

That he will not accept of the *Captaines* place, nor once see *De Plessis*, but that he is constantly resolued, either to wed *La Hay*, or his graue, whereat his father

is so extreamely incensed, as [illegible] and choller, he commands him henceforth [illegible] so much as to name him *La Hay*, swearing by his *Saiour*, that for his obstinacy and disobedience, hee will disinherite him, as indeed he might, hauing himselfe purchased three parts of his lands and reuenewes, through his care and industry in his profession, and so much discontent and choller, leaues in his *Colleagues* of *Tholouse*, who are already wayting and attending his comming.

De Salez is all on fire at this his fathers bitter resolution against him, and stormes and fumes, not onely beyond the bonds of reason, religion, and humanity; but also beyond himselfe. For sith *La Hay* is his sole delight & ioy, & that his father hath vowed he shall neuer mary her; his affectiō to her, makes him resolue to dispatch his father: yea, his head conceiues such murtherous thoughts, & his heart atracts, & assumes such degenerate and diuelish blood against him, that like an execrable wretch, and a hellish sonne, disdayning to take Counsell from *God*, and therefore taking it from the diuell his bloody *Tutor* and *Abettor*, he vowes he will foorthwith rid his hands of his father, and that he will therefore send him into another world, because he would giue him no content in this.

Oh wretched monster of *Nature*, Limbe of the diuell, nay a very diuell thy selfe, thus to resolue to take his life from him that gaue thee thine; Foule staine of mankind, bloody Paracydious miscreant, can no respect either of thy naturall and filiall obedience to thy kind and deere father, or of his white haires, and venerable old age, restraine thee? or no consideration

of

of thy conſcience or thy ſoule, of heauen or hell deterre thee from this bloody, inhumane, and damnable deſigne of thine, in laying violent hands on him? O me, where are thy thoughts, where thy ſenſes; where thy heart, thy ſoule, to act ſo execrable and infernall a *Tragidie*, on him without whom thou hadſt not been: on thy father, whom by the laws of *Heauen* and *Earth*, thou oughteſt both to loue, honour, reuerence and obey.

But *De Salez* being reſolute in this inhumane rage, & implacable malice & furie, watcheth how he may take time at aduantage, to effect and finiſh this his bloody buſineſſe, and on a night after ſupper, hearing his old father complaine that he found himſelfe not well, and commanding his Clarke *De Buiſſié*, very earely in the next morning to carry his water to *Doctor Salepin*, a famous *Phyſician*, whoſe chamber was farre off, in the place *Maubert*, he himſelfe lying in *Grennelles* ſtreet: *De Salez* thinkes this a fit opportunity to diſpatch his father, the which, O a thouſand griefes and pitties to ſpeake off, he accordingly performeth. For the morne appearing, his father hauing ſent away his Clarke with his water, and betaking himſelfe to ſleepe till his returne. His watchfull and murtherous ſonne, hauing purpoſely made himſelfe ready; and through the key hole and cranies of his chamber doore, eſpying his father ſleeping, he intends that this ſhall be his laſt ſleepe: When ſoftly ſtealing into his chamber, he (incouraged and animated by the diuell) and approaching his bed, as exempt of feare as grace, without any more delay or circumſtance, ſtifles his father betwixt two pillowes; when leauing him breathleſſe in his bed, his face expoſed to the

the ayre, and the doore shut, goes downe, giues the master of the house, the good morrow, and so trips away as fast as he can, to the signe of the swan within Saint *Honnoryes* Gate; and from thence rides away to Saint *Clow*, (two leagues distant from *Paris*) to see *Gondyes* gardens, fountaines, and house wherein that execrable and damnable *Iacabine* Frier, *Iaques Clement* murthered *Henry the third king of France*, but with an intent to returne to his fathers lodging immediatly after dinner, and to plead ignorance of the fact, and withall if occasion serue to stand vpon his innocency, and iustification, as indeed he did. Now his fathers Clarke *De Buissye*, returning in the morning from Doctor *Salepin*, entering his masters chamber, finds him starke dead; and almost cold in his bed: whereat he makes many bitter outcries, and grieuous exclamations: the man of the house hereat ascends the chamber, infinitely laments, grieues at this sorrowfull accident and spectacle; Vowes to *De Buissye* that he saw none who so euer in his house, much lesse in his masters chamber, and that his sonne *Mounsieur de Salez* departed assoone as he himselfe: they search his body, and find it no way wounded, so they beleeue and resolue that some pangue hath carried him away; Yet they hold it rather wisedome then folly to acquaint the *Lieutenant* Cryminall therewith; fearing least he might after suspect either violence or poyson: So he comes, conferres with his sonne *De Salez*, with his Clarke *De Buissye*, and with the man of the house; he visites the dead body, findes onely his head somewhat swollen, which his *Physicians* affirme, may be his striuing and struggling with death. When the *Lieutenant* out of his zeale and integritie to Iustice; hauing

hauing informed himselfe of Doctor *Salepin*, of *De Buissyes* being with him, as also from Saint *Clou* of his sonne *De Salez*, being there timely in the morning, and withall, that his Trunkes were all safe, and nothing wanting; they banish all suspition, and without farther enquiry, or doubt, commend the dead corps to the graue: Whose funerall with exteriour shew of extreame griefe and sorrowe *De Salez* performes in *Paris*, with all *Decency* and *Decorum*, answerable in all respects to his fathers ranke and qualitie. But we shall shortly see this maske of his diuelliſh hypocrisie puld off, and this inhumane paracide of his, both shamefully, and sharpely reuenged, by the iust iudgement and finger of God: The manner is thus:

This harmeles and innocent old father *Argentier*, is no sooner laid in his vntimely graue, but his bloody and execrable sonne *De Salez*, within eight dayes after, leaues *Paris*, and returnes to *Tholouse*, where already this sorrowfull newes is dispersed and diuulged, being for his vertues and integritie of life, generally bewayled of the whole Citie, onely graceleſse and impudent *La Hay* triumphs hereat, and her very heart and thoughts daunce for ioy heereof: she welcomes home her *De Salez*, with a world of sweet and sugred kisses; who as glad of her presence, returnes her them with a plentifull and prodigall interest; but his lustfull loue to her is so feruent, and his folly in himselfe so peruerse and obstinate; as he hath scarce the patience, much lesse the respect and modesty to weare blackes for his father sixe weekes, but casts them off; takes on gaudie, and scarlet apparell, and very solemnely marries *La Hay*: Whereby in respect

of the inequallity of their desceents and meanes: but especially, of her whorish conditions; he makes himselfe the laughter and May-game of all *Tholouse*.

But good *God*, what a prodigious and hellish match is this, sith man and wife, and both are murtherers; O execrable and miserable wretches, O bloody and impious miscreants, for sure if this marriage of yours proue happy, I may boldly and truely say, there will neuer any proue vnfortunate and miserable: For *Alas, alas*, what doe those impious and damnable crimes of theirs deserue and portend; but misery, ruine, and confusion of all sides? neither shall the curiositie of our enquiry carry vs farre, before we see it surprise and befall them:

For before they had been fully married three moneths, *De Salez* reaping his desires, and feasting himselfe with the pleasures of her youth; he directly, contrary to his hopes & expectation, is enforced to see & know, that which before he wold haue thought neuer to haue known or seen: for thinking his wife to haue been a modest & chast *Diana*, he now sees she is a deboshed *Layis*: yea, his misery is so great, as he needs no spectacle to see, that she dayly makes him a Knight of the forked order; and almost euery houre, despight of his care and ielousie, claps a cuckowes feather in his hat: which to preuent and remedie, he first administreth requests and perswasions, and then complaines to her father; But these are too weake reasons and too gentle motiues, to preuaile with so infatiable a strumpet; so as he is constrained to adde threats to his requests, and in the end blowes to his threats. But as it is impossible for the Leopard to change his skin, and the Aethiop his hew, so *De Salez* sees it labour lost

loſt to thinke to reclayme his wife from her beaſtly ſinne of adultery, wherein (notwithſtanding all that poſſible he can doe) ſhe takes ſuch a delight and habite, as by this time ſhe is growne ſo extreamely impudent, as when her husband is at home, ſhe is abroad ranging; and he is no ſooner abroad, but ſhe is inſtantly at home reuelling with her ruffians: Yea, ſhe is growen to that hight of obſcenity, as ſhe contemns and ſlaights her husband; that whither he be abroad or at home, ſhe will play the whore before his face with open doores: which although it be too late for him to remedy, yet it bites him to the heart, & grieues him to the gall: & now it is that he a thouſand times thinkes of his fathers aduiſe and councell in forſaking her; and as often wiſheth he had followed it. Now it is that his vnnaturall murthering of his father, thunders foorth horror, terror, and repentance to his foule and guilty conſcience; and now it is that he wiſheth from his heart and ſoule, that he had beene blind when he firſt ſaw her, and fairely laid in his graue before he firſt lay with her in bed. But theſe his complaints and griefes, bring him onely vexation and miſery inſteed of comfort; for now he vtterly diſpaires, and ſees no hope of his wiues reformation: Whereupon he reſolues to diuorce himſelfe from her, & to that end takes counſell thereon: but it is not ſo ſecretly managed by him, but the ſtrumpet his wife hath preſent notice and inckling thereof, whereupon ſeeing her husband exceeding rich, both in lands, coyne, plate, and other rich houſhold-ſtuffe, ſhe vowes not to quite her great ioynter ſhare and intereſt heereof thus. But before he had inrolled his ſuite in the Spirituall Court, or any way vented his owne ſhame, and

his wiues infamy in publike, she like a true Courtisan, and debaushed strumpet as she was, vowes to preuent him that would preuent her, and to send him to his death that would seeke to diuorce her; and in respect of his ielousie and malice, that as shee had formerly poisoned *La Frange* for her husbands sake, so shee would now murther him for her owne.

But miserable and execrable wretch, Oh to what a monstrous height and huge summe will all those thy beastly sinnes, and bloody enormities arise and amount vnto? But *Lust, Malice,* and *Reuenge* like three infernall furies, so possesse and preoccupate her senses, as shee will not retyre, till shee hath sent her husband into another world in a bloody winding-sheet. To which end, watching the time when most of her seruants were gone abroad to gather in the Vintage, shee softly opening her husbands chamber doore, steales in, and finding him soundly sleeping, approcheth his bed, when drawing foorth a rasor from her sleeue, which shee had purposely prouided, shee with an implacable and damnable malice steps to him, and cuts his throat, speaking onely these words to her selfe: *Loe heere the reward of thy Ielousie*; when throwing the knife, and her outward Taffata Gowne into the house of office, she leauing him weltring in his blood, very secretly conueyes her selfe through the Gallery to the Garden, where her wayting-*Gentlewoman* attends her, and so hyes away to the Church, thinking with a wretched impiety to cloake this her second murther, as her former, vnder the vaile of religion and piety: but her hopes, and the Deuill that gaue them her, will now deceiue her.

De Salez, her husband striuing and strugling for life

life against the pangs of death: feare and haste (contrary to her intent and minde) had so made his murtherous wifes hand shake and tremble, as shee did not so fully cut his throat boale, but hee could yet both crie and groane, which he did very mournfully, and which indeed was soone ouer-heard by a man and a maydseruant of his, who only remained in the house, who hearing their masters voyce, and hastily running vp, at these his pitifull and lamentable out-cryes, stepping to his assistance, they heare him (with his best power) vtter these fearefull speeches, *That Strumpet my wife hath kill'd mee: O that shee-Deuill my wife hath murthered me.* Whereat they cry out at the windows to the neighbours for helpe, alledging that their master is murthered. The neighbours assemble, & heare him report so much: so they send away for his Confessor, and the *Lieutenant Criminall*, to both whom he againe confesseth, *That it is the Strumpet his wife who hath murthered him:* And then raysing himselfe vp in his bed (with as much strength as his dying wound would permit him) he taking them both by the hands, with infinit sighes and teares reueales to them, that he it was, who at the seducing of the Deuill, had stifled his father *Argentier* to death in *Paris*, that he did it onely to marry this whoore his murtherous wife *La Hay*; that the killing of his father, yea the very remembrance thereof infinitely grieues his heart and soule, and for the which he infinitely repenteth himselfe, and beseecheth the Lord of mercy, in mercy to forgiue it him; and likewise prayed all that were present to pray vnto God for him: and these were his last wordes, for now his fleeting and fading breath would permit him to say no more.

All that were present, are amazed at this lamentable confession of his, to see that hee should murther his father, and his execrable wife, well neere himselfe; so they all glorified God for the detection and discouery hereof: But the *Lieutenant Criminell*, and the *Councellors* his Associates step to the window, and consult to haue him hanged, whiles hee is yet liuing, for the murthering of his father. But *De Salez* saues them that labour: for there and then he sinkes into his bed, and dyes away before them: so they instantly search the house and Citie for this wretched Murtheresse *La Hay*, whom impious and bloody strumpet they at last finde in the *Dominican Friers Church* at a Sermon, from whence with much obloquy and indignitie they drag her to prison, where they charge her with the murther of her husband *De Salez*, which the Deuill as yet will not permit her to confesse; but being adiudged by them to the Racke, she at the very first torment confesseth it.

Vpon which seuerall murthers, the *Criminell Iudges* of the *Tournelles* proceed to sentence: so first they adiudge the dead body of *De Salez* for so inhumanly murdring his father *Argentier*, to be half a day hanged by the heeles to the common gallows, and then to be burnt to ashes, which is accordingly executed: then they adiudge his wife *La Hay*, for murthering him, the next day to be strangled, then burnt: so that night some Diuines deale with her in prison about the state of her soule, whom they finde infinitely obdurated through the vanitie of her youth, and the temptations of the Deuill; but they worke effectually with her, and so at last (by the mercies of God) drawe her to contrition and repentance, when willing her not

not to charge her soule with the concealing of any other crime; and shewing her the dangers thereof, shee very freely, yet sorrowfully, confesseth; how shee it was, that for three hundred crownes had caused the *Empericke Michaele* to poyson *La Frange*, for the which shee told them she was now exceedingly repentant and sorrowfull: Whereof the Diuines (sith it was not deliuered them vnder the seale of Confession) aduertising the Iudges, they all wonder at Gods prouidence, to see how all these murthers are discouered and burst foorth, one in the necke of the other; so they alter her sentence, and for these her double murthers, they condemne her to haue her right hand cut off, and then to be burnt aliue: and so they make curious inquiry and research to apprehend this old bloody varlet *Michaele*.

In the meane time, that very afternoone, this miserable and murtherous Curtesan *La Hay*, though to the griefe of her sorrowfull father and sisters, yet to the ioy of all *Tholouse*, is brought and fastned to her stake, where her hand being first strucke off, she with many sighes and teares deliuereth these few words: That her crimes were so foule and odious, as shee was ashamed to looke either *God* or man in the face; That she was very sorrowfull for causing *La Frange* to be poysoned, as also for murthering of her husband *De Salez*, whose wealth she onely affirmed she loued, but not himselfe, the which she wholly attributed to the lust and vanitie of her youth, to her neglect of prayer and forsaking of God; which made the Deuill so strong with her, and shee with the Deuill: and which was the sole cause and ground of this her miserable ruine and destruction; she with teares and

prayers

prayers beſought the *Lord* to be good vnto her ſoule; and (lifting vp her eyes and hands to Heauen) likewiſe beſeech the whole aſſembly to pray heartily vnto *God* for her: when recommending her ſoule into the hands of her Redeemer, the fire being alighted, her body was ſoone conſumed to aſhes, whoſe lamentable, yet iuſt end and puniſhment, cauſed a number of ſpectators to weepe, as yet pitying her youth and beautie, as much as they deteſted the enormitie of her crimes.

And now for this deuilliſh and murtherous Empericke *Michaele*, although as ſoone as he heard of *La Hayes* impriſonment, he (to ſaue himſelfe) left *Tholouſe*, and fled towards *Caſtres*, diſguiſed in a *Friers* habit, with his beard ſhauen: yet by the care of the *Court* of *Parliament*, or rather by the immediat finger and prouidence of God, he is found out, and brought back to *Tholouſe*, where for poyſoning of *La Frange*, (the which he now without the Racke confeſſeth) he is adiudged to be broken on the Wheele, there to remaine till he be dead, and then his body to be thrown into the Riuer of *Garrone*: the which the ſame day is accordingly executed and performed, to the infinite ioy of all the ſpectators: but as he liued an *Atheiſt*, ſo he deſperatly died a Deuill, without any ſhew at all, either of contrition or repentance; onely he vomited forth this wretched ſpeech, That becauſe the world had ſo much to ſay to him, he would ſay nothing to the world, but bade the Executioner diſpatch him.

Now by the ſight of this mournefull and bloody *Hiſtory*, the *Chriſtian Reader* may obſerue and ſee how *Gods* reuenge doth ſtill triumph againſt murther, and how he in his due time and prouidence doth aſſuredly

ſtill

still detect and punish it. It is a History which may serue to deterre and forwarne all yong *Gentlemen*, not to frequent the companies of whores and strumpets; and all sonnes not to transgresse the will of their parents, much lesse not dare to lay violent hands on them. It is a glasse wherin yong *Gentlewomen* & *Wiues* may at life see, what bitter fruits and sharpe ends euer attend on Whordome and Murther: It is a liuely *Example* for all kind of *Empericks* and *Druggers* whatsoeuer, to consider how seuerely *God* doth infallibly reuenge and punish the poysoning of his *Saints* and *children*. In a word, it is a *Lesson* and *Caueat* for all people, and for all degrees of people, but especially of *Christians*, (who professe the Gospell of *Christ*) not onely to detest these foule sinnes of Reuenge and Murther in others, but to hate and abhorre them in their selues: which that all may endeauour to practise and performe, graunt good *God*, who indeed art the onely giuer of all goodnesse.

I THE

THE TRIVMPHS OF GODS REVENGE AGAINST the crying and execrable *Sinne of Murther.*

Hiſtory XII.

Albemare *cauſeth* Pedro *and* Leonardo *to murther* Baretano, *and he after marrieth* Clara, *whom* Baretano *firſt ſought to marry: He cauſeth his man* Valerio *to poyſon* Pedro *in priſon, and by a letter which* Leonardo *ſent him,* Clara *perceiues that her husband* Albemare *had hired and cauſed* Pedro *and* Leonardo *to murther her firſt love* Baretano; *which letter ſhe reueales to the Iudge, ſo he is hanged, and likewiſe* Valerio *and* Leonardo *for theſe their bloody crimes.*

With what face can we preſume to tread on the face of *Earth*, or dare lift vp our eyes to that of *Heauen*, when our thoughts are ſo rebellious to conſpire, and our hearts and reſolutions ſo cruell, to embrue our hands in the innocent blood of our harmleſſe and *Chriſtian* brethren: Thoughts they are, which in ſeeming to pleaſe our ſenſes, poyſon our ſoules, (and doe therefore truely poyſon our ſoules, becauſe they ſo falſly pleaſe our ſenſes,) Reſolutions

solutions they are, which we cannot conceiue or attempt with more inhumanity, then finish with misery. Sith in thinking to send them to their vntimely graues, we assuredly send our selues to our owne miserable and infamous ends; whereof in this ensuing *History*, we shall find many wofull *Presidents*, and mournefull examples, in diuers vnfortunate and wretched persons, who were borne to happinesse, not to infamy; to prosperity, not to misery. If they had had so much *Grace* to secure their liues, as *Vanitie*, and *Impietie* to ruine them; It is a *History* purposely produced, & penned, for our detestation, not for our imitation: Sith it is a poynt of (true and happie) wisdome in all men to beware by other mens harmes; Read it then with a full intent to profit thy selfe thereby, and so thou mayest boldly, and safely rest assured, that the sight of their sinnes and punishments, will proue the reformation of thine owne.

FRuitfull, and faire *Lombardie* is the *Countrey*, and the great, populous, and rich *Citie* of *Milan* (the Capitall of that Dutchie) the place where the Scene of this mournefull & *Tragicall History* is layen where perpetrated: The which to reteich from its first spring and *Originall*, thereby the more truely to informe our curiositie, and instruct our knowledge: We must then vnderstand, that long since the *Duke of Feria* succeeded the *Count De Fuentes*, as *Vice-roy* of that potent and flourishing Dutchie, for *King Philip the third* of *Spaine* his master: There was native and resident in that *Citie* an ancient *Nobleman*, tearmed *Seigneor Leonardo Capello*, who in his younger yeares had married a *Spanish* Lady, and brought her from *Spaine*

to *Milan*) tearmed *Dona Maria de Castiana*: He exceeding rich and noble, and she as noble and faire; he by his fathers side allied to *Cardinall Charles Barromeo* (since Sainted by Pope *Paul V.*) shee by her mother to the present *Duke* of *Albucurque*, hee infinitely honoured for his extraction and wealth: she no lesse beloued and respected for her beautie and vertues: and although there are but few mariages contracted betweene the *Millaneses* and *Spaniards*, and those very seldome proue succesful and prosperous, in respect of the antipathy, which (for the most part) is hereditary betwixt the commands of the *Spanyards*, and the subiection of the *Millaneses*: yet it seemed that this of *Capello* and *Castiana* was first instituted in heauen, ere consummated on earth; for so sweetly did their yeres humours and affections conioyne and sympathize, as although they were two persons, yet I may truly affirme and say, they had but one heart, affection and desire, which was mutually to please, and reciprocally to affect and loue each other. And as Marriages cannot be reputed truly happy and fortunate, if they be not blessed and crowned with the blessings of children, (which indeed is not onely the sweetest life of humane content, but also the best and sweetest content of our humane life) so they had not been long maried, ere God honoured them and their nuptiall bed, with a beautifull and delicate and young daughter, tearmed *Dona Clara*, the onely childe of their loynes, and heyre of their lands and vertues, being indeed the true picture of themselues, and the ioyfull pledge and seale of their intire and inuiolable affections; who hauing ouerpast her Infancy, and obtayned the eighteenth yeare of her age, she was so exquisite-

ly

ly adorned with beautie, and so excellently endued and enriched with *vertues*; as distinctly for eyther, or ioyntly for both, she was, and was truely reputed, the *Paragon* of *Nature*, the pride of *Beautie*, the wonder of *Millan*, the glory of her *Sex*, and the *Phenix* of her *Time*. And because the puritie and perfection of her beautie deserues to be seene through this dimme Perspectiue, and the dignitie of her vertues knowen of the Reader in this my impolished relation. For the first, shee was of stature indifferently tall, but exceeding streight and slender: her haire either of a deepe Chessnut colour, or rather of a light black, but to which most adhering and inclining, fancy mought, but curiositie could dificultly distinguish; Her complexion and tincture, rather of an amorous and louely browne, then of a Roseat and Lillie die; but yet so sweetly pure, & purely sweet: (and withall rather fat then leane) that no earthly obiect could more delight and please the eye, or rauish the sense. And for her eyes, those two relucent lamps and starres of loue, they were so blacke and piercing, that they had a secret and imperious influence, to drawe all other eyes to gaze and doe homage to hers; as if all were bound to loue her, and she so modest, as if purposely framed to loue none but her selfe: Neither did her Front, Lippes, Necke or Pappes any way detract, but euery way to adde to the perfection of her other excellencies of *Nature*: For the first seemed to be the *Promontory* of the *Graces*, the second, the Residence of delight and pleasure; The third the *Pyramides* of *State and Maiestie*; And the fourth the *Hills* and *Valley* of loue. But leaue we the dainties of her body, now to speake of the rarities and excellencies of her

mind, which I cannot rightly define, whether the curioſitie and care of her parents in her education, or her owne ingenious and apt inclination to *Vertue* and *Honour*, were more predominant in her: for in either, or rather in both, ſhee was ſo exquiſite and excellent, that in *Languages*, *Singing*, *Muſicke*, *Dancing*, *Wiſdome*, *Temperance*, and *Modeſtie*, ſhe was ſo fully compleat and rare, that to giue her her due, and no more, ſhee could not be paraleld by any yong Lady of *Lombardy*, or *Italy*, nor equalliz'd but by her ſelfe.

Thus if her noble extraction, and fathers wealth made her ſurmount others, and her delicious ſweet beauty & vertues excell her ſelfe, no maruell if thoſe *Adamants*, and theſe excellencies draw diuers of the beſt *Canaliers* and chiefeſt *Gallants* both of *Milan* and *Lombardy*, to affect and ſeeke her in marriage; and indeed although ſhee be ſought by diuers of them with much reſpect and honour, anſwerable in all regard to her ranke and quality; yet neither her parents, or ſelfe are ſo much importuned by any, as by *Signior Giouani Albemare*, a young noble *Gentleman* of the citie, who was adorned and fortified with theſe humane priuiledges, to bee well deſcended, rich, and of ſome twenty fiue yeares olde; a match in the eye and cenſure of the world, yea, and in al outward appearance correſpondent and equiualent; if his generous perfections and vertues had paralleld hers, or if the candeur and ſinceritie of her affection had not iuſtly tranſported her thoughts and heart from him, becauſe ſhe had formerly fixed and ſetled them on another *Gentleman*, younger of yeares then *Albemare*, but in all other reſpects, as well of *Nature*, as *Fortune*, euery way his ſuperiour, named *Signior Alphonſus Baretano*,

retano, a young Gentleman of one of the noblest families of *Millan*, of some eighteene yeares old, whose father was lately deceased, and had left him sole heire to many rich lands and possessions; but (withall) exceedingly intangled in Law, and ingaged in many debts and morgages, whereinto the vanitie and prodigalitie of his youth had deeply precipitated and ingulphed him: which consequently reflecting and falling on his sonne, we shall see will proue a hinderance to his marriage, and an obstacle to his content and preferment. But to obserue some order and decorum in the conduction and dilation of this History, wee must briefly be informed, that as of all the Beauties of *Lombardy*, *Albemare* onely chiefly affected and loued *Clara*; so of all the *Caualiers* of the world, *Clara* affected and loued no other but *Baretano*: for as conformitie of yeares, manners, and inclinations, breed a *sympathie* in affections; so they in their tender youth often frequented one the others company, sometimes at the Dauncing, and Musick Masters, but many times at Weddings, Feastes; and noble assemblies: being well neere as equall in age, as in complexion and stature. Againe, the vicinitie of their residence added much to the combining and inflaming of their affections: for they were opposite in nothing but in their mansion houses, from whose galleries and windowes many times publikely, but more often by stealth, their eyes could not refraine to tilt at each other, with the inuisible launces of loue and affection, which bred such a habit, and that habit so powerful a second *Nature*, that it was now become impossible for them not to gaze each on other: so as if the innocency of their purilitie, made them delight in each others sight and

and company with desire; so now their more riper yeares inforce them to desire it with delectation: for when as yet they were so yong, as they knew not the instinct and influence of *Nature* (which cannot bee taught by a more powerfull or ingenious Tutrix then her selfe) yet they neuer met but kissed, nor kissed, but as if their heart and thoughts checke their lippes for taking such short farwels each of other: But now when their years had proclamed them both very capable to march vnder the Standard of *Hymenæus*: This *Venus* & that *Adonis*, for so her fresh beauty, & his flourishing youth (with as much right as fame in *Milan*,) generally entituled them: They felt some pleasure wanting, which as yet they could not find; and therefore no maruaile, if they desired to find that which they wanted: So as burning in affection each to other, *Clara* hearing spoken of a husband, infinitely wished that *Baretano* were hers; and when he heard of a wife, he ardently longed, and feruently desired that *Clara* were his: Neither can I rightly say, whether he were more affectionate in her constancy to her; or shee constant and resolute in her affection to him: so that as heretofore they hardly knew the way to kisse, now time (running on in her swift careere) had taught them to desire to marry: and that whereas formerly *Baretano* onely tearmed *Clara* his sweet Mayd, and she him her deare *Friend*: Now loue had suggested and giuen them new desires, and therefore new *Epithites*: for sometimes as well in earnest as in iest, he could not refraine to tearme her his sweet wife, nor she him her deare husband; and herein their tongues were onely but the outward Hearaulds of their inward hearts, as their hearts were of their more

more ſecret and retired deſires. And as feruent loue, and true diſcretion, very ſeldome concurre and meet; ſo although affection made them rich in inuenting new inuentions to meet and kiſſe: yet they were ſo poore, or rather ſo blind in diſcretion, as they could not beare their affections in ſecreſie and ſilence: but by this time they are bewrayed to their Parents, and diuulged to their acquaintance: but if any grieue and ſtorme at this vnexpected newes, it is firſt *Albemare*, then *Capello* and *Caſtiana*, betwixt whom there was a ſecret promiſe, and verball contract, that he and no other ſhould marry their daughter.

Thus we ſee that *Albemare* & *Baretano* are become Competitors and Riualls in their affections, for either of them affect *Clara* as the miſtris of their thoughts, and both adore her as the Queene Regent of their deſires. But as they ſympathize in their hopes to purchace her for their wife: So they differ in the meanes and progreſſe of their reſolutions, how to obtaine her. For whiles *Baretano* ſues the daughter before her Parents, ſo doth *Albemare* the Parents before their daughter: but what effects and ends, theſe beginnings will produce, ye ſhall ſhortly ſee, and they themſelues very ſoone both feele and find:

Capello and *Caſtiana* (as we haue formerly ſaid) with much affliction and griefe, vnderſtanding of their daughters affection to *Baretano*, and reciprocally of his to her, they (with much impatience and paſſion) relate it to *Albemare*, whoſe affection to *Clara*, hath made him ſo ſubtile towards them, as although his heart knowes this newes, yet he makes his tongue denie the knowledge thereof; when proteſting of his intire and feruent affection to her: and that he muſt

either wed her or his graue: they consult on their important businesse, how they may Dethronize *Baretano*, and set and inthronize *Albemare* in the chance and choyce of *Clara's* affection: As for *Capello* and *Castiana*, they so highly affect *Albemares* great and free estate, and so disdainefully hate the intricate incombrances of *Baretano's*, as they vow, there resolutions shall Sayle by the compasse of his desires; and he in exchange, that his affections and desires shall still steere their course by that of their resolutions: So from the matter of their agreement, they proceed to the manner how to effect it; To which end her father and mother single their daughter apart, and in mild and faire tearmes demand her, what hath past betwixt her and *Baretano*, and whether she be so simple and inconsiderate to take so poore a Gentleman for her husband, whose estate is so weake and small, as it cannot well maintaine himselfe, much lesse her; *Clara* already prepared and armed by her affection to receiue these, or the like speeches from her Parents', hauing twice or thrice metamorphosed the Lillies of her cheekes into Roses, very temperately and modestly returnes them this discreet and respective answere.

That as she must needs affirme she is confident of *Baretano's* affection to her, so she must as truely denie, that as yet he had euer motioned her for marriage; which if he had, considering that his birth, meanes, and vertues were such as euery way deserued not only her equall but her superiour, she is enforced to reueale them, that she loues him so tenderly and deerely, as if her will and pleasure be not contradicted by theirs, it will be not onely her ioy but her felicity, to accept and take him for her husband, before all others of the world.

But

But this modest answer of hers, they hold too peremptory for a child to giue, and Parents to receiue; as if it sauoured more of irrigular zeale to *Baretano*, then of due respect and obedience to themselues, yet the sooner to diuert her from her owne desires and resolutions to make her flexible to theirs, they as yet hold it fit, rather to continue mild then imperious towards her, and so by deprauing the deserts and debasing the merits of *Baretano*, to seeke to extoll and magnifie those of *Albemare*, as if the first were onely a foyle, and the second a rich *Diamond*, worthy of her affection and wearing: and indeed so exquisite and excellent a *Caualeir*, they depaint him to her in the richest frame and pompe of all his prayses, aswell of the endowments of mind, as of those of *Fortune*, that they leaue no insinuating *Oratory* vnessayed, nor perswasiue attempt vnattempted, to make her shake hands with *Baretano*, and consequently to extend her armes & heart to receiue & retaine *Albemare:* But although she were yong in yeares and experience, yet loue in this fragrant and flourishing spring of her youth, had so refined her iudgement, and indoctrinated and prompted her tongue, that her thoughts commanded & marshalled by her heart, and both by her desires and affection to *Baretano*, she confusedly intermixing, and interrupting her words with many far fetched broken sighes, againe returnes her Parents this reply.

If your age will not, yet my youth or rather my heart informes me, that *Baretano* as far exceeds *Albemare* in the priuiledges of the mind and body, as *Albemare* doth him in those of *Fortune*, but that my resolutions and answeres, may answere and correspond

with my obedience, although I loue *Baretano*, yet I will neuer hate, rather honour *Albemare*; but to make him my husband, or my selfe his wife, if Earth haue, I hope Heauen hath not decreed it: And I humbly beseech yee, that this may rest your Resolution, as I assuredly thinke it shall and will remaine mine.

Capello and *Castiana* (like discreet parents) seeing their daughter *Clara* wholly wedded (in a manner) to the singularitie of her owne will, they yet conceiue it to bee farre more requisite to reuert her reasons by faire meanes, then refute and refell them by force, sith loue and discretion hath still reference to that, and this relation still to choller, many times to repentance: whereupon minding her of the blessings which infallibly attend filiall obedience; and the miseries and curses which indiuidually wayt on contempt and disobedience, hoping that time will effect that which Importunitie cannot, they as then leaue her to her thoughts, and shee them to their care; caring for nothing so much, nay, I may wel say, for nothing else, then to see her affection diuorced from *Baretano*, and contracted and wedded to *Albemare*; who hauing curious correspondence and intelligence with them, he is euer and anon acertained, not onely what hath, but what doeth passe betwixt them and their daughter; and withall, is aduised by them, to delay no time, but to frequent and haunt her as her *Ghost* and shaddow; yea, and no more to conceale his affection and suite from her, but to acquaint all *Millan* therewith, sith it was no disparagement, but rather an equall honour for him to match with *Clara*, and *Clara* with him. Which concluded betwixt *Capello* and *Castiana*, *Albe-*

mar

mare is ſo farre from reiecting this aduiſe and counſell, as hee embraceth it with much ioy and delectation, and vowes (though with the perill of his life) to perſeuere and purſue her in mariage: To which end, authorized as well by his owne affection, as their authoritie, *Clara* is neither abroad nor at home, but hee meets her, giues away all time from himſelfe, to giue himſelfe to her: ſo as it ſeemes to the eye of the world, that *Capello's* houſe is now become his, and that his daughter *Clara* likewiſe ſhortly ſhall be: yea, hee addes ſuch curioſitie to his care, and ſuch care to his affection in courting her, as ſhee cannot be eyther at *Maſſe*, or *Veſpres*, but he is either with her, or neere her; and when in ſolemne pompe or zeale ſhee viſits the *Domo* (or *Cathedrall* Church) of that Citie, and in it the Shrine of the new *Saint Charles*, then he wayts and attends on her at the Porch ſtayres, ſometimes with his Coach, but many times (as the cuſtome of *Millan* is) on his Foot-cloth, and prauncing *Barbarie* Horſe, to conduct her home: yea, and not to fayle in any Complement of an accompliſhed Louer, beſides the harmony of his own inſinuation and ſolicitation, he greets her with rich preſents, and ſalutes her with all varietie of melodious Muſicke, and mellifluous Voyces: but all this notwithſtanding, although hee euery way vſe his beſt art and induſtry, and her father and mother their beſt skill to make her flexible to his deſires, and their pleaſure; yet ſhee as hauing her thoughts wholly bent and fixed on her deare & ſweet *Baretano*, lookes haggard and auerſe on *Albemare*, giuing him ſuch generall anſwers, and cold entertainement, as hee ſeeth hee hath farre more reaſon to deſpaire then hope to obtaine her. Whereupon doub-

ting of her affection, hee hath againe recourſe to her parents loue; who to confirme and ſeale it him, ſeeing faire meanes will not preuaile with their daughter, they reſolue to vſe force, and ſo to adde threats to their requeſts, and choller to their perſwaſions, to make her abandon *Baretano*, and embrace *Albemare*. But if the firſt preuaile not with her, the ſecond cannot; for ſhee now tells them plainly, that ſhee neither can nor will affect any man for her husband but *Baretano*; and yet ſhe is ſo farre from any determinate reſolution to marry him, as ſhee affirmes, that their will ſhall be her law, and their pleaſure her reſolution.

Whiles thus *Albemare* in the way of mariage ſeeks our fayre and ſweet *Clara* publikely, no leſſe doth *Baretano* priuately; and although with leſſe vanitie and oſtentation, yet he hopes with far more fortunacy & ſucceſſe; as grounding his hopes vpon theſe reaſons: That in heart and ſoule *Clara* is onely his, as both in ſoule and heart he is hers: ſo he entertaines her many times with his Letters, and yet not to ſhew himſelfe a nouice in diſcretion, or a coward in affection, he making her content his commands, as ſhee did his deſires her felicitie; hee in remote Churches and Chappels, (for whoſe number *Millan* exceeds *Rome*) hath both the happineſſe and honour priuatly to meet her: where if they violate the ſanctitie of the place, in conferring and cheriſhing their affections, yet they ſanctifie their affections, in deſiring that ſome Church or Chappell might inueſt and crowne them with the religious honour, and holy dignitie of Mariage. For hauing ieaſted of Loue heretofore, now like true Louers, they hencefoorth reſolue to loue, not in ieſt, but in earneſt; and as of their two hearts, they haue alreadie

dy made one, ſo now they meane and intend to diſpoſe of their bodies, thereby to make one of two: And this is their ſole deſire, and this and onely this, is their chiefeſt delight, and moſt pleaſing'ſt deſires and wiſhes.

But as it is the nature of Loue, for Louers to deſire to ſee none but themſelues, and yet are ſeene of many: ſo this their familiaritie and frequent meeting is againe reported to her father and mother, whereat they murmure with griefe, and grieue with diſcontent and affliction: and now not to ſubſtract, but to adde to their vexation, it is reſolued betweene our two young amorous Turtle Doues, *Baretano*, and his faire *Clara*, that he ſhould publikely motion them for her in mariage; which hee in wonderfull faire tearmes, and orderly *Decorum*, (as well by his friends as himſelfe) performeth. When contrary to his wiſhes, but not his expectation, they giue him ſo cold entertainment, and his ſuite ſuch poore and ſharpe acceptance, as they (in affection and zeale to *Albemare*) not onely deny him their daughter, but their houſe: an anſwer ſo inciuill, and therefore ſo iniuſt, as might giue a teſtimony of ſome way of their care, yet no way of their diſcretion to themſelues, or affection to their daughter. And heere I muſt confeſſe, that I can difficultly define, whether this reſolution and anſwer of *Capello* and *Caſtiana*, more delighted *Albemare*, diſcontented *Baretano*, or afflicted *Clara*: who although in the entrance of their Loues, their hopes ſeem'd to be nipt, and their deſires croſt by the frowns of their parents, yet they loue each other ſo tenderly & dearly, as theſe diſcontents notwithſtanding, they will not retire, but are reſolute to aduance in the progreſſe of

of this their chaſt and feruent affections, and although their commands endeuour to giue a law to her obedience, in not permitting her to be frequented of *Baretano*; yet her obedience is ſo inforced to take a more ſtronger of her affection, as deſpight her Parents malice and ielouſie towards them, when they are ſweetly ſleeping in their beds, then is their daughter *Clara* waking with *Baretano*, and he with her; oftentimes walking and talking in the Arbours, and many times kiſſing & billing in the cloſe galleries of the garden; which they cannot conceale or beare ſo cloſely, but her father & mother haue exact notice & intelligence therof by ſome of their truſty ſeruants, whō they had purpoſely appointed as *Sentinells* to eſpie & diſcouer their meetings. Whereupon (as much in hatred to *Baretano* as in affection to *Albemare*) knowing that if the cauſe be once remoued, the effect is ſubiect ſoone to follow and enſue; they very ſuddenly and priuately ſend away their daughter from *Millan* to *Modena* by Coach, there to be mewed and pent vp with the *Lady Emelia* her Aunt, and beſides her waiting *Gentlewoman Adriana*, none to accompany and conduct her, but onely *Albemare*, hoping that a ſmall time, his preſence and importunate ſolitations would deface the memory of *Baretano*, to ingraue his owne in the heart and thoughts of his ſweet *Clara*. Who poore ſoule, ſeeing her ſelfe exiled and baniſhed from the ſocietie of her *Baretano's* ſight and company, wherein vnder heauen ſhe chiefly and onely delighted; ſhe hereat, doth as it were drowne her ſelfe in the Ocean of her teares; ſtorming aſwell at the cruelty of her parents, as at her owne affliction and misfortune; and no leſſe doth her *Baretano* for the abſence of his ſweet Saint

and

and deare Lady *Clara*: for as their affections, so their afflictions are equall; now mourning as much at each others absence, as formerly they reioyced and triumphed in their presence. But although the ielousie of *Capello* and *Cattiana* were very carefull to watch and obserue *Baretano* in *Milan*, and the zeale and affection of *Albemares* safety to guard, and sweetly to attend on *Clara* in *Modena*: Yet as fire suppressed, flames foorth with more violence, and riuers stopped, ouerflow with more impetuositie; so despight of the ones vigilancy, and the others ielousie, though *Baretano* cannot be so happy and blessed to ride ouer to *Modena* to see and salute his *Clara*; yet loue, which is the refiner of inuentions and wit, and the polisher of iudgement, cannot yet detaine him from visiting her with his letters, the which in respect of the hard accesse and difficult passage to her, he is inforced to send her by subtill meanes, and secret messengers; and the better to ouershadow the curiosity of his Arts, and the Art of his affection herein, he among many others, makes vse of a Fryer and a Hermite, for the conueyance of two letters to *Modena*, to his Lady: which (as fit agents for such amourous imployments) they (with more cunning and fidelity, then zeale and *Religion*) safely deliuered her, and likewise returned him her answeres thereof. And because the feruency of their affections and constancies each to other, are more liuely depaynted and represented in these two, then in any other of their letters; therefore I thought my selfe in a manner bound, here to insert them, to the end to giue the better spirit and *Grace* to their *History*, and the fuller satisfaction and content to the curiositie of the Reader: That which *Ba-*

retano sent Clara vpon her departure from *Millan* to *Modena* by the Fryer, spake thus:

HOw iustly may I tearme my selfe vnfortunate, Sith I am enforced to be miserable before I know what belongs to happinesse: For if euer I found any content, or Heauen vpon Earth, it was onely in thy sweet presence; which thy sudden absence and vnexpected exile, hath now made, at least, my Purgatory, if not my Hell. Faire Clara iudge of thy Baretano by thy selfe, what a matchlesse griefe it is to my heart, and a heart-killing terrour to my thoughts, to see thee made captiue to my riuall, and that the Fates and thy Parents seeme to bee so propitious to his desires, and so inexorable and cruell to mine: That I must liue alone in Millan without thee, and he alone in Modena with thee: which makes that, I know not, whether I more enuie his ioy, or lament and pitty mine owne sorrowes and afflictions. But if I haue any sense or shaddow of comfort in this my calamitie, it onely consists in this, that as thou carriedst away my heart with thee; so thou wilt vouchsafe to returne me thine in thy letter by a reciprocall requitall and exchange. For if thou neither bring me thy selfe, nor send me that; I may be sought in Millan, but found nowhere but in heauen: were I priuiledged by thy consent, much more authorized by thy command; I would speedily rather flie then poast to thee: for Fayre and Deere Clara, as thou art my sole Ioy and Soueraigne felicitie, so whiles I breath this ayre of life, thy will shall be my lawe, thy commaund my Compasse, and thy pleasure my resolution.

BARETANO.

Her answere returned by the Frier to *Baretano* at *Millan*, was to this effect.

It

IT is for none but our ſelues to iudge how equally we participate and ſhare of miſery, in being depriued of each others preſence. Thou tearmeſt mine abſence either thy purgatory, or thy hell; & my afflictions & torments for thine are ſo great, and withall ſo infinite, as I haue all the equitie and reaſon of the world to repute them not only one, but both: Thou art miſtaken in the point of my thraldome, for whiles Albemare *vowes himſelfe my captiue, I diſdayne to be his, and both vow and triumph to be onely* Baretanos; *I know not whether I haue brought thy heart with me to* Modena, *but ſure I am, I left mine with thee in* Millan: *If my Parents ſeeme now pleaſing and propitious to him, I am yet ſo farre from diſpaire, as I confidently hope the Fates will not prooue cruell or inexorable to thee, and in thee to my ſelfe: but rather that a little time will change their reſolutions and decrees, Sith they cannot our affections and conſtancy. If* Clara *be thy ſole ioy and* Soueraigne *felicity, no leſſe is* Baretano *hers: And albeit, I could wiſh either thou heere with my ſelfe in* Modena, *or I there with thee in* Millan. *Yet ſuch is my Aunt* Emeliars *care, and* Albemares *ielouſie ouer me, that wert thou in this Citie, thou couldeſt difficultly ſee me, but impoſſibly ſpeake with me; wherefore refraine a whiles, and let thy Iourney hither to me be ended ere begun; yet with this prouiſo and condition, that the cauſe thereof, thy affection to me, be begun neuer to be ended: and thinke that my ſtay and exile heere ſhalbe as ſhort, as either my beſt Art in my ſelfe can inuent, or trueſt zeale to thee ſuggeſt. In which* Interim *let vs ſolace our ſelues, and viſit each other by the Ambaſſadours of our hearts, I meane our letters: And this reſolue my deare* Baretano, *that during our abſence wiles thou doeſt feaſt on my* Idæa, *I will not faile to ſurfeit on thine.*

CLARA.

Baretano's other letter sent *Clara* to *Modena* by the *Pilgrime*, was couched and penned in these tearmes.

HAd not thy requests (in thy last letter) granted our Prohibition against my desires and wishes, I had long since left Millan *to haue seene* Modena, *& in it thy self my sweet & deere* Lady; *but I speake it to my present comfort, and future consolation and ioy, that it is excesse not want of affection which infuseth this prouident care & carefull prouidence to thy resolutions, to the end that thy returne make vs as ioyfull as thy departure sorrowfull, and consequently that the last proue as sweet vnto our hearts and thoughts, as the first was bitter: And yet beleeue me deere* Clara, *that my affection is so intire and feruent to thee, because I know thine is reciprocally so to my selfe: that I deeme it not onely capable to make difficult things easie, but which is more, impossiblities possible: For, for thy sake what would I not attempt? and to enioy thy sight and presence what would I leaue vnperformed? But if thou wilt not permit me to come to thee to* Modena, *nor yet speedily resolue to returne to me to* Millan: Sorrow *will then preuent my* Ioy, *and* Dispaire *my* Hope; *For if thou hasten not thy arriuall and our interuiew, sickenesse will be my death; wert thou as kind as faire, or as affectionate as I am feruent in affection, thou wilt then rather suffer me to liue with thee, then to die for thee: for in this rest confident, that if thou denie me that request, I cannot* Nature *this tribute, my affection this homage, or thy beautie this sacrifice.*

BARETANO.

And *Clara* her answere hereunto returned to *Milan* to *Baretano*, by the foresaid *Pilgrime* was traced in these words:

The

THe last command of my Parents, & the first resolution of my aunt Emelia, *& my suitor* Albemare, *haue now reduced me to so strict a Sequestration (or rather captiuitie) as onely my thoughts, hardly my pen, hath the freedome and power to signifie thee so much. But as calmes ensue tempests, and sun-shine showers, so I beseech thee to brooke it with as much patience, as I doe with griefe; and not onely hope, but resolue, that violence is neuer permanent, and all extreames subiect to reuolution and change. Wherefore my deare* Baretano, *consider and thinke with thy selfe, that my stay from* Millan, *and thy prohibition from* Modena, *hath this two-fold excuse, that is in my will, but not as yet in my power to performe; and this will rather hinder, then any way aduance the accomplishing of our desires; Sith a little time may effect that with my parents, which I feare importunity wil neuer; neither can thy heart so much long for my sight, or wish for my presence, as my soule doth for thine: Sith to giue thee but one word for all, thy selfe, and onely thy selfe, art both the life of my ioy, and the ioy of my life. A thousand times a day I wish* Modena *were* Millan, *and againe, as often that* Albemare *were metamorphosed into* Baretano. *Therefore, I am so farre from preuenting thy ioy, as though at the price of my death, I am ready to sacrifice my life for the preseruation of thine; as also for the banishing of thy dispayre: Write me not then of thy sickenesse, least thou as soone heare of my death, and I know not what request to denie thee, sith I haue already granted and giuen thee my selfe, which is all that either I can giue, or thou desire; cherish thy selfe for my sake, and I will thy remembrance for mine.*

CLARA.

By theſe louing Letters of theſe our Louers, the *Reader* may obſerue and remark, what a firme league, and ſtrict and conſtant friendſhip there was contracted and ſetled betwixt them, and what a hell their abſence was each to others thoughts and contemplations: In the meane time, whiles *Baretano* entertaines *Clara* with Letters, *Albemare* doth with wordes, wherein he vſeth his beſt Rhetoricke and Oratory, to draw her to his deſires; and withall, to liſten and eſpy out, if there paſſe any paſſages of Letters, or other correſpondency betwixt them. Which although *Clara* her affection to *Baretano* vow, and her diſcretion to her ſelfe reſolue to conceale and obſcure from *Albemare*, yet loe here falles out a ſiniſter and vnexpected accident, which will diſcouer and bewray it; yea, and of all ſides, and to all parties produce griefe, ſorrow, choller, and repentance, which in effect (briefly) is thus:

Clara had reaſon in her former Letter ſent by the *Pilgrim*, to tearme this her ſequeſtration in *Modena* a captiuitie, ſith the bounds of her aunt *Emilias* two ſmall Gardens, and the walles of her little Parke, were the limits wherein her liberty was confined, and her ſelfe as it were, immured: for farther ſhe was not permitted to goe, except to the Church with her aunt in her Coach, but ſtill accompanied by *Albemare*, who left no minutes nor occaſions, as well to ſee her, as to bee ſeene of her. Now to giue ſome truce (though not peace) to her diſcontents, and thereby ſomewhat to calme the impetuoſitie of thoſe tempeſts, which loue had ſtirred vp in her heart and thoughts for the abſence of her *Baretano*, ſhee neuer better accompanied then when alone, ſometime paſt away

away the irkſomneſſe of her time in walking in the Gardens, but many times in the Parke cloſe ſhut, followed only by her wayting Gentlewoman *Adriana*: for in reſpect of her aunts vnkindneſſe, and *Albemares* ielouſie, ſhe would neither accept of her familiaritie, nor of his company. Now to the neereſt end of the Parke, not farre diſtant from the ſecond Garden, was a curious walk, ranked about with many rowes of *Sycamore* trees, and at the farther end thereof a cloſe ore-ſhadowed Bower; yea, ſo cloſely vayled, that the rayes of the Sunne could neither peepe in, to ſcorch the pureneſſe of her beautie, or to contend with the piercing luſtre and reſplendancy of her eyes: and to this Bower, in a fayre and cleare day, *Clara* (about three of the clocke after dinner) repaires, hauing in her hand to delude the time, the old amourous *Hiſtorie* of *Hero* and *Leander*, which was very lately illuſtrated, and newly reprinted in *Millan*, and wherein indeed for the conformitie of their loues with her owne, ſhe tooke a ſingular delight to reade: but that which gaue ſweeter muſicke to her thoughts, and felicitie to her heart, and mind, were her *Baretano's* two Letters, (which we haue formerly ſeene) and which as then ſhe had purpoſely brought with her to ſurney and peruſe; yea, ſhe reades them ore againe & againe; and to write the truth, more oftner then there are words, or I thinke ſillables therein contained: but when ſhe deſcends to his name, ſhee cannot refraine from kiſſing it; yea, and ſuch is her tender loue to *Baretano*, as ſhe bedewes it with her teares; a thouſand times ſhe wiſhed her ſelfe with him, or he with her, and bitterly blames the crueltie of her parents, for ſeparating their bodies, ſith ſhee not onely hoped, but aſſu-

aſſured her ſelfe, that God had conioyned, and vnited their hearts. But whiles ſhee in the middeſt of theſe paſſionate extaſies ſeemes to be rapt vp into the heauen of ioy, at the peruſall of theſe Letters of *Baretano*; and then againe to be plunged into the hell of ſorrow, at the conſideration and remembrance of his abſence, ſhee heares a voyce, which ſhe thinkes is not farre off from her, when looking foorth the Bower, and deeming it to be that of her wayting-Gentlewoman, whom ſhe ſaw ſomewhat neere her gathering of Strawberries, and wilde Lillies, ſhee within a flight ſhot from her, perceiues it to be her *Louer*, (but not her loue,) *Albemare*, who knowing her there in the Bower, and for want of other talke, ſpeaking to the Eccho, ſhe gueſſed by his courſe, (wherein ſhe was not deceiued) that he had an intent to ſalute and ſpeake with her; which to preuent, becauſe it wholly diſpleaſed her, to be cumbred with the company of ſo vnwelcomed a gueſt as himſelfe, ſhe haſtily folds vp her letters in her handkercher, and clapping them (at leaſt as ſhe thought) into the pocket of of her gowne, takes her bookes in her hand, and calling *Adriana*, trips away backe towards the garden, by the other ſide of the Parke, purpoſely to eſchew and auoid him, as indeed ſhe did.

Albemare grieues to ſee *Clara's* coyneſſe and cruelty toward him, although ſhe were departed foorth the Parke from him, yet his affection is ſo feruent to her, as he will needs aſcend the Bower, eſteeming it not onely a kind of content, but a bleſſing to his thoughts; ſith he cannot be where ſhe is, yet to be where ſhe hath beene: when thinking to mount the ſtayres of the bower, he vnexpected at the foot thereof,

of, finds the two letters whereof we haue formerly ſpoken, which it ſeemes ſlipt foorth of *Clara's* handkercher, as ſhe was putting it into her pocket: *Albemare* taking vp the letters, and ſeeing them directed to his ſweet *Clara*, he betwixt the extreames of loue and ioy, kiſſeth them againe and againe for her ſake: when ſitting downe in the Bower, he betakes himſelfe to read and peruſe them, verily expecting and hoping to gather and draw ſome thing from them which might tend to aduance the proceſſe of his affection towards her: But when he had read the firſt, he was ſo extreamely perplexed and afflicted, as he had hardly the patience to peruſe the ſecond, and yet at length haſtily and paſſionatly running it ouer, and ſeeing by all the circumſtances thereof, that it was in vaine for him any longer to hope for *Clara*, ſith ſhee was *Baretano's*, and *Baretano* hers, he like one Lunaticke, ſtampes with his foot, throwes awas his hat, teares his haire for very griefe and choller, now thinking to teare the letters, and then to offer violence to himſelfe: But when the fumes and flames of this his folly were ouerblowen, and that he had againe recalled his wits to take place in the proper ſeat of his iudgement and diſcretion; then taking vp his hat, and pulling it downe his eares, he leaues the Bower and Parke, and ſo going into the houſe, ſhewes them to the Lady *Emelia* her Aunt, who prayes him not to diſpaire, but that *Baretano's* letters notwithſtanding, he himſelfe ſhall ſhortly marry her *Niece Clara*; only ſhe prayes him for the two letters, becauſe ſhe affirmes, ſhe will to morrow ſend them to *Millan* to her father and mother. Wherein he ſaith, he will take aduiſe of his pillow; when faſting out his ſupper, he betakes

himſelfe to his bed, to ſee whether he can ſleepe away thoſe his paſſions and vexations. And by this time *Clara* going to locke vp theſe two aforeſaid letters in her trunke, ſhe finds her handkercher, but miſſeth her letters; whereat bluſhing for ſhame, and then againe looking pale for ſorrow, griefe and anger, ſhe ſpeedily ſends away *Adriana* to the Bower, to looke them, who returnes without them; and then ſhe knowes for certaine that *Albemare* hath found them: whereupon for meere griefe and anger, feigning her ſelfe ſick, ſhe withdrawes her ſelfe to her chamber, and there preſently betakes her ſelfe to her bed.

I may well ſay that *Clara* & *Albemare* betake themſelues to their beds; but I am ſure not to their reſt: For griefe and loue ſo violently acte their ſeuerall parts in their hearts and thoughts, as ſigh they doe, but ſleepe they cannot: Yea their paſſions and ſorrowes are as different as their deſires; for as *Albemare* now grieues that he hath found theſe letters, ſo doth *Clara* that ſhee hath loſt them; and as he vowes not to reſtore her them, ſo ſhe neither dares, and yet diſdayneth to demand them of him: Yea againe, which is more, as their ſorrowes are different, ſo are their pretended conſolations, at leaſt if I may properly and truely tearme them conſolations: For as *Clara*, although ſhee haue loſt her *Baretano's* letters, doth yet reioyce that ſhe ſtill retaines the writer and Authour thereof ingrauen and caractered in her heart: ſo doth *Albemare*, that now fully knowing *Baretano* to be his riuall, and who by all probability is like to beare his miſtris from him, he hath (as he iniuſtly conceiues, a iuſt reaſon to be reuenged, and a true occaſion to fight with him: but as *Clara's* comfort and conſolati-

on

on herein proceeds from true affection, ſo doth the vanitie and impiety of this reſolution of *Albemares* from helliſh malice, and deuilliſh indignation: yea, although the night doth or ſhould bring counſell, yet as *Clara* paſſeth it ouer onely with ſighes, ſo doth *Albemare* with fumes and reuenge againſt *Baretano*, vowing that he will in the morne towards *Millan*, and there trie his fortune, either to kill him or to bee killed of him, in a *Duell*; to which end he is no ſooner ready, but he acquaints the Lady *Emelia* with his intended iourney, but not with his reſolution to fight with *Baretano*, and the ſame he doth to the Empreſſe of his thoughts, and Queene of his deſires) *Clara*, demaunding her if ſhe pleaſe to command him any ſeruice for *Millan*; who both bluſhing and paling hereat, her affection to *Baretano*, hauing now made her expert in the ſubtilties of loue, ſhe well knowes what wind driues *Albemare* to *Millan*: and therefore guided by diſcretion, and not by paſſion, ſhe returnes him this anſwer: That hauing neither reaſon nor deſire to command him, ſhe only prayes him to remember her humble duety to her Father and mother, and ſo wiſheth his iourney proſperous: which anſwere of hers (being indeed no other then *Albemare* expected) he yet aduanceth to kiſſe her at parting, which her ciuility though not her affection granted him; not ſo much as once dreaming or ſuſpecting that he conceiued the leaſt thought or intent to fight with her ſweet *Baretano*, and ſo he takes horſe, hauing onely one ſeruant with him.

Albemare being arriued at Saint *Remie*, a ſmall Towne within fifteene miles of *Millan*, he reſolues to dine there, which he doth: and to auoid the heate of

the day, then betakes himselfe to sleepe an howre or two; being awaked, he commands his man to make ready his horse, and seeing the Hoast of the house in his chamber, enquires of him if there were any Gentlemen in the house riding for *Millan*, who as soone returnes him this vnlook'd for, and vnexpected answere; that there was a braue Gentleman in his house named *Signior Baretano*, who was to ride thither some two houres hence. *Albemare* no sooner heares the name of *Baretano*, but his very heart blood flasheth vp in his face, when demaunding him againe what manner of Gentleman he was, he told him he was a tall slender yong Gentleman, with neuer a haire on his face, and out of this window quoth he, you may now see him walking in the garden; when *Albemare* looking foorth, sees indeed that it was his very riuall *Baretano*; when enquiring further of the Hoast what followers he had with him, hee told him that then he had none, but sometimes when he came thither, either to take the ayre, or breath his horse, he was attended by two or three, and so the Hoast leaues him, not once suspecting of any difference betweene them. *Albemare* seeing his enemy (because his riuall) brought to him, whom he formerly resolued to seeke and find out, assumes a base and a bloody resolution to set vpon him in the high way disguised, and there to venter his owne life, to depriue him of his: which to effect he will haue no eye witnesses of this his ignoble and trecherous businesse; and therefore purposely sends away his man to *Millan* before him, and so slipping into the towne, prouides himselfe of a maske or visard; then takes his horse, and rather like a theefe then a Gentleman, lurkes behind a Groue (some three miles

miles from Saint *Remy*) attending *Baretano's* comming, who poore harmeleſſe young Gentleman, harbouring and breathing no other thoughts and wiſhes then charitie to all the world, and pure and ſeruent affection to his faire and deare *Clara*, likewiſe takes his horſe, and drawes homeward toward *Millan*, when being arriued to the place where *Albemare* ſecretly lay in ambuſh for him, he furiouſly and ſuddenly ruſheth foorth, and with his Rapier drawen in his hand, runnes *Baretano* into his right arme, who feeling the wound almoſt as ſoone as he ſaw his enemy who gaue it him, he is at firſt as it were amazed hereat; when thinking him by his maske to be a *Banditti*, who were then very buſie in *Lombardy*, but eſpecially in that Dutchie of *Millan*, he told him that all the coyne he had, which was ſome ten double Piſtols in gold, and two Duckats in ſiluer, were at his ſeruice, but to fight in his defence he would not: Not quoth he, that he was any way a Coward, but that he affirmed he was lately affianced and ingaged to a young Lady: ſo that he perfectly knew that her affection was ſo deare and tender towards him, as either the loſſe or preſeruation of his life would be that of hers: *Albemare* galled and touch't to the quicke with this his heart killing anſwere to him, is wholly inflamed with choller againſt him, when ruſhing towards him, he deliuers him theſe words: Villaine it is not thy gold but thy life which I ſeeke, and then ſtrayning himſelfe to runne *Baretano* thorow, loe the ſtring of his Maske breakes, where *Baretano* apparently ſees it is his Riuall *Albemare*: whereat ſuch is his tender affection to his ſweete and fayre *Clara*, that hee who before turned crauen,

and would not fight for his owne ſake, is now cheerefully reſolued not onely to fight, but if occaſion require, to dye for hers: and ſo returning the villaine to *Albemares* throat, hee inſtantly drawes, and ioynes with him: and if *Albemare* be reſolute in fighting, no leſſe valiant and couragious is *Baretano*; for the remembrance of his *Clara's* ſweet Idea, and freſh delicious beautie, infuſeth ſuch life to his valour, and ſuch generoſitie, and animoſitie to his courage, as he deales his blowes roundly, and his thruſts freely, making *Albemare* know, that his Rapier is of an excellent temper, and yet his heart of a better: And *Albemare* ſeeing hee muſt buy his victory dearer then hee expected, and diſdaining to be out-braued and beaten by a boy, pluckes vp his beſt ſpirits and courage to him, and ſo likewiſe behaues himſelfe manfully and valiantly: in ſuch ſort, that within leſſe then a quarter of an houre, *Baretano* hath giuen him fiue wounds, and he *Baretano* three, when the *Count* of *Martingue* paſſing that way in his Coach towards *Millan*, and ſeeing two Gentlemen ſo buſily fighting, he cryes out to his Coach-man, to gallop away with all celeritie, and ſo parts them; when ſeeing them full of blood, ſweat, and duſt, hauing his Chyrurgion ſtill in his traine with him, he out of an honourable courteſie and charitie, intreats and accompanies them to the next houſe, where he cauſeth their wounds to bee dreſt and bound vp; when by their apparell ſeeing them to be *Millaneſes*, is deſirous to know their quarrell, and profers his beſt aſſiſtance to reconcile and make them friends: but their hearts are ſo great, and their malice ſo implacable, as they both thanke the *Count* for his noble courteſie, but beſeech him to pardon

don them, in obscuring their names and quartell; and yet he is so noble and generous, as he will not so leaue them, but seeing them shrewdly wounded (though not he thinks mortally) he for their greater ease and safetie, causeth two of his *Gentlemen* to mount their horses, and takes them both vp into his Coach with him, and so brings them within the Gates of *Millan*, where after they had seuerally rendred him many thankes for his *Courtesie* and *Honour*, hee commends them both to their good Fortunes, and so leaues them.

Baretano and *Albemare* being thus arriued at *Millan*, they conceale their fighting, and so keepe their chambers, till they haue secured their wounds; when *Albemare* visits *Capello* and his Lady *Castiana*, & reports to them the health & dutie of their daughter, as also her auersnesse towards him, and withall shewes her *Baretano's* two Letters to her, wherby it is apparant, that she is so wholly his, as he himselfe is sure neuer to obtaine or enioy her. Her father and mother at the first seeme to hang their heads at this newes, and the perusall of the Letters; but at last bid him not despaire, but be couragious, for he and onely hee shall be their sonne in law. But *Albemare* considering that for the tearme of at least sixe moneths, he *Camelion*-like had onely been fed with the ayre of these their vaine promises, and that he perfectly knew that *Clara* onely intended to marry *Baretano*, and none but him, his loue to her was so tender and feruent, as hee cannot conceiue the shadow of any hope how to obtaine her for his wife in this world, before hee haue sent *Baretano* into another, when being constant in his resolution thereof to himselfe, because hee was resolute in his con-

constancy and affection to *Clara*: no reason, no Religion, not his Conscience, not his Soule, can diuert him from this bloody designe, from this murtherous and therefore damnable proiect: Feeding therefore on Malice, and boyling with Reuenge towards *Baretano*, he not as a Gentleman, but rather degenerating from the vertue and honour of that honourable degree and qualitie, bethinkes himselfe either by pistoll or poyson how hee may treacherously dispatch him: whereon ruminating and pondering (as malice and reuenge may perchance slumber, but difficultly sleep) the *Deuill* who is neuer absent in such hellish stratagems and occasions, giues him meanes (though by a contrary course) how to dispatch him: For on a day descending the stayres of the *Domo*, hee sees *Pedro*, and *Leonardo*, (two Souldiers, or rather *Braues* of the Castle of *Pauia*) passe by him, with whom hee had been formerly acquainted, but so poorely apparelled, as weighing their bloody humours by their necessity, he (in fauour of money) thinkes them very fit *Agents* and *Instruments*, to murther and make away *Baretano*, to which end, to play the *Practique* part as wel as the *Theorique*, & so to reduce this his bloudy concontemplation into action, hee sends his man *Valerio* after them, and prayes them to repaire to him in the *Cloysters* of *Borromeos* Palace, for that he hath a businesse to impart them of great importance for their profits. *Valerio* ouertakes them, deliuers them his masters pleasure; who netled with this word Profit, they repayre to the *Rendeuous*, and meet *Albemare*; when hauing refreshed their acquaintance, and hee sworne them to secrecy, he as a wretched and perfidious Gentleman, acquaints them with his desire,

some

some ten dayes hence to haue them murther *Seignior Baretano* in the street by night, and to giue it out, that it was done by some *Spanyards* of the *Viceroyes* Guard, and that he will giue them an hundred Duckatons in hand, and leaue them as much more with his man *Valerio*, which they shal receiue of him, when they haue dispatcht him; and for his owne part, some foure or fiue dayes hence he will away for *Modena*, to cast the better varnish and colour that hee was innocent thereof, and had no finger at all in the businesse.

Pedro and *Leonardo*, seeing that *Albemare* proffered them gold, which they so much wanted and desired; like two limbes of the Deuill, and as a couple of hellish Blood-hounds, not only promise, but swear to him punctually, in al respects to performe his desires, & so they touch their first hundred Duckatons, which being the pledg & price of innocēt blood, it wil assuredly cost them deare, and draw downe vengeance, ruine & confusion on their heads from heauen, when they least think or dreame thereof. *Albemare* hauing setled this his bloody and mournfull businesse with *Pedro* and *Leonardo*, he is againe solicited by *Capello*, and *Castiana*, to returne to their daughter in *Modena*: wherunto he willingly consenteth; when armed with their Letters to her, wherin they charge her on their commands & blessing, to dispose her selfe to affect & marry him, he within foure dayes departeth. But hauing secretly reuealed his fight with *Baretano* to some of *Capello* his chiefest and most confident seruants, they yet loue and honour their young Lady *Clara* so well in her absence, as they send her the true relation and intelligence thereof, which is at *Modena* a little

before *Albemare*, the which being vnknowne to him, he is no ſooner arriued there, but hee ſalutes firſt the Aunt *Emilia*, then her *Neece* and his *Miſtris*, *Clara*: to whom hauing deliuered her Parents Letters, ſhe ſtepping aſide to the window, reades them; and ſo returning to him againe, ſhee giue him this ſharpe and bitter welcome: *My father and mother commaund mee to loue thee; but how can I, ſith vpon the high way, thou baſely and treacherouſly attempteddſt to kill my deare* Baretano, *whom I loue a thouſand times dearer then the whole world?* when with teares in her eyes, and choller in her lookes, ſhee very ſuddenly and paſſionately flings from him, whereat *Emilia* wondreth, and hee both ſtormes and grieues; and ſo they betake themſelues to their chambers, where *Albemare* throwing himſelfe on his bed, ſayth thus to himſelfe: Vnkind and cruell *Clara*, if thou take my fighting with *Baretano* thus tenderly, how wilt thou brooke the newes of his death? On the other ſide, *Clara* grieues as much at her *Baretano's* wounds, as ſhee reioyceth at his ſaftie and recouery; yea, ſo tender is her affection to him, as ſhe a thouſand times wiſhes, that the blood hee loſt, had ſtreamed from her owne heart. Againe, knowing his wounds free from danger, ſhee cannot but ſmile, and delight to ſee his deare and true affection to her, in remembring that he would not fight for his owne ſake, and yet was ready, yea and valiantly hazarded to looſe his life for hers; and in theſe amorous conceits & contemplations ſhee penſiuely driues away the time, admiring and wondring that all this while ſhee heares not from her *Baretano*: But *alas, alas!* ſhee ſhall heare too too ſoone of him, though indeed neuer more from him: for theſe execrable wret-

wreches, *Pedro* and *Leonardo*, ſome foure dayes after *Albemares* departure to *Modena*, they according to their promiſe and oath giuen him, like two moſt bloody and butcherly villaines, cruelly aſſault and murther this harmeleſſe and innocent young Gentleman *Baretano*, in the ſtreets of *Millan* by night, with no leſſe then ſeuen ſeuerall wounds, whereof foure were cleane thorow his body; and ſo giues it out (as it was formerly concluded) that hee was murthered by ſome *Spaniards* of the *Viceroyes Guard*: when the ſame night they repaire to *Valerio*, acquaint him therewith, receiue their other hundred Duckatons, and ſo prouide for their ſafetie in the citie: but that bloody money, and this cruell murther, will in the end coſt him dearer, then either they imagine, or dreame of.

Whiles *Millan* ratleth with the newes of *Baretano's* bloody and vntimely end, as his owne friends infinitly lament and grieue, ſo *Capello* and his wife *Caſtiana* cannot refraine from reioycing thereat, as now aſſuring themſelues that *Albemare* ſhall ſhortly bee their ſonne in law: and for *Valerio*, hee with all poſſible ſpeed writes away thereof to *Modena*, to his Maſter, who entertaines this newes with infinite ioy and delectation, and preſently acquaints the Lady *Emilia* therewith; whereat ſhe reioyceth, and he triumphes: but they both reſolue to conceale it from *Clara*, becauſe they knew ſhee will euen diſſolue and melt into teares therat. But foure dayes after are not fully expired, but her father & mother aduertiſe their daughter *Clara*, their ſiſter *Emilia*, and *Albemare* thereof, by a Gentleman, a ſeruant of theirs, whom they purpoſely ſend to *Modena*, to bring backe *Clara*, and *Albemare*

to *Millan.* But it is for none but Louers, to conceiue or iudge, with what extreame exceſſe of griefe and immoderate ſorrow our poore *Clara* vnderſtands this heart-piercing newes of her *Baretano's* mournfull and ſorrowfull death: for ſhee is no ſooner aduertiſed thereof, but ſhee throwes off her attyre, teares her hayre, and twice following falles to the ground in a ſwound, ſo as *Emilia*, *Albemare*, *Adriana*, and her fathers Gentleman can hardly refetch and keepe life in her: but being come againe to her ſenſes and ſelfe, and faintly opening her cloudy eyes to the beames of the Sunne, who enamoured of her beautie (as well in pitie as loue) came to comfort and reuiue her: ſhee wringing her hands, then croſſing her armes, and laſtly, looking vp towards *Heauen*, betwixt ſighing and ſpeaking, breathes forth theſe mournfull, paſſionate, and affectionate ſpeeches:

O my *Baretano*, my ſweet and deare *Baretano*, and ſhall thy wretched *Clara* liue thou being dead? when the violence of her affection and ſorrow making her forget her ſelfe, and her God, ſhe ſecretly vnſheathes her knife, and then and there would haue ſtabbed her ſelfe to death, had not *Albemare* and her Aunt *Emilia* ſpeedily ſtept to her aſſiſtance, and preuented her, by wreſting it from her; when conducting her to the Garden, to take the ayre, ſhee prayes *Albemare* to leaue her, and in his abſence often againe repeating the name of her deare *Baretano*, ſhe a thouſand times wiſheth that her life had ranſomed his, vowing that although ſhe were a woman, yet if ſhe knew his murtherers, ſhee would flie to their eyes, and teare out their hearts, in meere reuenge of his inhumane and cruell death: when her ſorrowes are ſo infinite, and hes

her griefe so vnsupportable, as shee cannot long remain in one place, but withdrawes her selfe from the garden to her chamber, whither her Aunt *Emilia* carefully accompanies her, lies with her that night to comfort her, who poore afflicted young Lady, neyther can nor will be comforted: so as the next morning, had not her Aunt powerfully preuented and stopped her, shee had then vndoubtedly entred the *Nunnery* of her owne name, Saint *Clara*, and in that retyred and obscure life there ended her dayes in *Modena*; resoluing in true affection and zeale to her dead *Baretano*, neuer thenceforth either to see her parents, or *Millan*: but being diuerted and comforted by some Diuines, and many Ladies of that Citie, shee brooking her sorrowes as patiently as she may, (with much solicitation) after ten dayes, permits her selfe to be conueyed home to *Millan*, where although shee were very cheerefully receiued, & ioyfully entertained of her father and mother, yet she likewise went neere to haue there mewed her selfe vp a spirituall sister in the *Nunnery* of the *Annunciation*; but that againe she was preuented: whereat grieuing, she yet takes on mourning attire, and vowes to weare it a whole yeare for his sake: when to make her selfe (as shee was) both a true Louer, and a true mourner to the memory of her dead *Baretano*, shee oftentimes steales into Saint *Euphemias* Church, where hee was buried, and there bedewes his tombe with her teares, liuing so pensiuely, and disconsolately, that although she liue in the world, yet it seemes she neither is, nor long will be of the world.

But as women are but women, and as Time is a soueraigne remedy for all diseases and sorrowes; so

about ſome ten moneths after, the inceſſant importunitie of her father and mother, and the continuall tender reſpect and obſeruant courteſie of *Albemare* towards her, make her ſomewhat neglect and forget the memory of *Baretano*, and now to looke on him with a more pleaſing and fauourable eye then before. But here (againe) a conſideration makes her affection dye towards *Albemare*, almoſt as ſoone as it beginnes to liue: For why (quoth ſhee) ſhould ſhee affect or loue him, who at Saint *Remy* gaue her *Baretano* three ſeuerall wounds? But then Loue againe ſteps in, and thus pleads with her for *Albemare*: That he receiued fiue wounds, and gaue *Baretano* but three, which made him loſe far more blood then *Baretano*: and yet that this attempt of his was onely occaſioned through his affection to her, and onely for her ſake, as louing her dearer then his owne life, which againe gaue her thoughts ſuch ſatisfaction, as weighed downe and vanquiſhed, as well by the power and prayers of her parents, as alſo by the endleſſe ſighes, letters, and preſents of *Albemare*, the yeare is no ſooner expired, and her mourning weeds and attire done away, but to their owne hearts content, and the vnſpeakable ioy of their parents, they in *Millan* (with great pompe and brauery) are very ſolemnly maried. But this mariage of theirs ſhall not prooue ſo proſperous as they expect and hope: For *God* in his all-ſeeing *Prouidence*, hath decreed to diſturbe the tranquilitie, and ſerenitie thereof, and to make them feele the ſharpe and bitter ſhowers of affliction and miſery, which briefly doth thus ſurpriſe and befall them.

Albemare and *Clara*, haue hardly been married together a yeare and quarter, but his hote loue begins to

to waxe cold and frozen to her; yea, although she affected him truely and tenderly, yet hee continually neglecting her, and no longer delighting in the sweetnesse of her youth, and the freshnesse of her beautie, his lustfull eyes and thoughts carry his lasciuious selfe abroad among *Courtezans*, when they should be fixed on her, and resident at home with his chast and faire *Lady*: so as his infidelitie prooving her griefe and torments, and his vanitie and ingratitude; her vnspeakeable affliction, and vexation; shee with infinite sighs and teares, repents her matching him, & a thousand times wisheth she had been so happy and blessed to haue dyed *Baretano's* Martyr, and not so vnfortunate and accursed to liue to see her selfe *Albemares* wife: and yet were there any hope of his reformation, shee could then prefixe bounds to her calamities and sorrowes: But seeing that his vices grew with his age, and that euery day he became more vitious and vnkind to her then other, her hopes are now turned into despaire, her mirth into mourning; yea, her inward discontents so apparantly bewray themselues in her outward sorrowfull complexion and countenance, that the Roses of her cheekes are metamorphosed into Lillies, and her heart so wholly taken vp with anguish, and surprized with sorrow, as she wisheth that her bed were her graue, and her selfe in Heauen with *God*; because shee could find no comfort heere on Earth with her husband: But beyond her expectation, *God* is prouiding to redresse her griefe, and to remedy her afflictions by a very strange and vnlooked for accident.

The *Prouidence* and *Iustice* of *God*, doth now againe refetch bloody *Pedro*, to act another part vpon the

Stage

Stage and *Theatre* of this *History:* For hauing ſpent that money lewdly, which he before got damnably of *Albemare*, his wants are ſo great, and his neceſſitie ſo vrgent, as hauing played the murtherer before, he makes no conſcience nor ſcruple now to play the thiefe: and ſo by night breakes into a Iewellers ſhop, named *Signior Fiamata*, dwelling in the great place before the *Domo*, and there carries away from him, a ſmall Trunke or Casket, wherein were ſome vncut *Saphyrs* and *Emeralds*, with ſome *Venice* Chriſtall pendants for Ladies to weare in their eares, and other rich commodities: but *Fiamata* lying ouer his ſhop, and hearing it, and locking his doore to him for feare of hauing his throat cut, giues the out-cry and alarum footh the window, which ringing in the ſtreets, make ſome of the neighbours, and alſo the watch approach and aſſemble; where finding *Pedro* running with a Casket vnder his arme, he is preſently hem'd in, apprehended and impriſoned, and the Casket tooke from him, and againe reſtored to *Fiamata*; when knowing that he ſhal die for this robbery, as a iuſt puniſhment & iudgement of God, now ſent him for formerly murthering of *Baretano*, he hauing no other hope to eſcape death but by the means of *Albemare*, he ſends earely the next morning for his man *Valerio*, to come to the priſon to him, whom he bids to tel his maſter *Albemare* from him, that being ſure to be condemned for this robberie of his, if he procure him not his pardon, he will not charge his ſoule any longer with the murther of *Baretano*, but will on the ladder reueale how it was hee who hired himſelfe and *Leonardo* to performe it; *Valerio* reporting this to his maſter, it affrights his thoughts, and terrifies his conſcience

science and courage, to see himselfe reduced to this misery, that no lesse then his life must now stand to the mercy of this wretched varlet *Pedro's* tongue. But knowing it impossible to obtaine a pardon for him, and therefore high time to prouide for his owne safety, by stopping of *Pedro's* mouth; he resolues to heaue *Ossa* vpon *Pellion*, or to adde murther to murther, and now to poyson him in prison, whom he had formerly caused to murther *Baretano* in the street, to the end he might tell no tales on the ladder, thinking it no ingratitude or sinne, but rather a iust reward and recompense for his former bloody seruice; so to feed *Pedro* with false hopes thereby to charme his tongue to silence, and to lull his malice asleepe, he speedily returnes *Valerio* to prison to him, who bids him feare nothing, for that his master hath vowed to get him his pardon, as he shall more effectually heare frō him that night: whereat *Pedro* reioyceth and triumpheth, telling *Valerio* that his master *Albemare* is the most generous and braueſt Caualier of *Lombardy*. But to nip his ioyes in their vntimely blossomes, and to disturbe the harmony of his false content; that very day as soone as hee hath dined, hee is tryed and arraigned before his Iudges; and being apparantly conuicted and found guilty of this robbery, he is by them adiudged to be hanged the next morne, at a gibbet purposely to be erected before *Fiamata's* house, where he committed his delict and crime: which iust sentence not onely makes his ioy strike saile to sorrow, but also his pride and hopes let fall the Peacocks plumes to humilitie and feare: But his onely trust and comfort, yea, his last hope & refuge is in *Albemare*, who hearing him to be condemned, to be execu-

ted the next morning: he is enforced to play his bloody prise that night, and so in the euening sends *Valerio* to prison to him with a Capon, and two Fiascoes (or bottles) of wine, for him to make merry, informing him that he hath obtained his pardon, and that it is written, and wants nothing but the *Viceroyes* signe to it, which he shall haue to morrow at breake of day. But the wine of one of the bottles was intermixed with strong and deadly poyson, which was so cunningly tempered, as it carried no distatefull, but a pleasing relish to the pallate: *Valerio* like an execrable villaine, prouing as true a seruant to his master, as a rebellious and false one to his God, he punctually performes this fearefull and mournefull businesse; and hauing made *Pedro* twice drunke, first with his good newes, and then with his poysoned wine, hee takes leaue of him that night, and committing him to his rest, promiseth to be with him very early in the morning with his pardon. When this miserable and beastly prophane wretch, neuer thinking of his danger, or death; of God, or his soule; of heauen, or hell, betakes himselfe to his bed, where the poyson spreading ore his vitall parts, soone bereaue him of his breath, sending his soule from this life and world to another.

Now the next morning very early as the Gaoler came to his chamber, to bid him prepare to his execution, he finds him dead and cold in his bed; and thus was the miserable end of this bloody, and inhumane murtherer (and theefe) *Pedro*: who yet for example sake was one whole day hang'd by the heeles in his shirt, at his appointed place of execution; because his Iudges deemed that he had cruelly poysoned and made away himselfe. And now doth *Albemare* a-

gaine

gaine reioyce and triumph to ſee he hath auoyded that dangerous ſhelfe and rocke, whereon he was very likely to haue ſuffred ſhipwracke, yea, and now hee thinkes himſelfe ſo abſolutely ſafe and ſecure; as hee holds it impoſſible that either his murthering of *Baretano*, or his poyſoning of *Pedro* can any way reflect on him, or hencefoorth produce him any further ſtormes or tempeſts: but his hopes and ioyes will deceiue him, for God who is the infallible reuenger of innocent blood, will not ſo leaue him, but ere long, when he leaſt thinkes or dreames thereof, not onely in his prouidence detect theſe his foule crimes, but in his iuſtice ſeuerly puniſh them, and the Readers curioſitie ſhall not goe farre to ſee it; for as to a guiltie conſcience, it is the pleaſure of the Lord, that one miſery befall him in the necke and nicke of the other, ſo *Albemare* is no ſooner freed of *Pedro* in *Millan*, but behold, hee is afreſh intangled and aſſaulted with *Leonardo* (his other hired murtherer) in *Pauia*: who hauing heir prodigally rioted away his hundred Duckatons, and alſo run himſelfe farre in debt; his Creditors ioyne together, and ſo clap him priſoner, where hauing no other hope for his freedome and libertie, but to relie on *Albemare*, he writes him a letter to *Millan*, wherein he acquaints him with his pouerty and miſery, and prayes him (for the obtayuing of his liberty) either to lend or giue him fifty Duckatons: *Albemare* receiues this letter, but forgetting his former ſeruice, as alſo thinking it onely a fetch of *Leonardo* to fetch him ouer for ſo many Duckatons, as God would haue it, he very inconſiderately burnes this his letter, and anſwereth it with ſilence: but he ſhall repent it, when it will be too late, and out of his power

to remedy this his ingratitude and indeſcretion.

Leonardo hauing at leaſt fifteene dayes expected an anſwere from *Albemare*, and receiuing none, he is extreamely incenſed and inraged to ſee himſelfe thus ſleighted and forgotten of him, when exaſperated by his miſery, and animated by his extream pouerty and indigence, in that he is now enforced to ſell away his apparell, and ſo to vncloth his backe, thereby to feed his belly, he intends no more to requeſt and pray him, but now reſolues to touch him to the quicke, the which he doth in theſe few lines which he ſends him to *Millan* by a meſſenger of purpoſe.

IF my firſt letter preuayled not with thee for the loane or giſt of fifty Ducatons, to free me from this my miſerable impriſonment, I make no doubt but this my ſecond will, for being a Souldier, I giue thee to vnderſtand, that I hold it farre more generous to hange then ſtarue; ſith as a halter is onely the beginning of my friends ſorrowes: ſo it will likewiſe be the end of all mine owne miſeries: yea, if thou ſpeedily furniſh and accompliſh not my requeſt, although it coſt me my life, I will no longer conceale how thou diddeſt hire Pedro *and my ſelfe for two hundred Duckatons to giue* Signior Baretano *his death, which at thy requeſt wee performed: Thinke then how neere my ſecreſie concernes thy life, ſith when I ſuffer death, I know thou haſt but a ſhort and poore time left thee to ſuruiue mee: Therefore thanke thy ſelfe, if thy ingratitude turne my affection into contempt, and that into reuenge and malice.*

LEONARDO.

Now although *Leonardo* meane not as hee write, yet this his meſſenger comming to *Millan*, and not finding

finding *Albemare* at his houſe, hee knowes not (and is reſolute) what to doe, either to ſtay his comming in, or to deliuer his Letter to ſome of his ſeruants: But wayting at his doore till late in the euening, and hearing no newes of him, he giues it to *Valerio*, and (without telling him from whom, or whence it came) prayes him ſafely to deliuer it to his Maſter, and that hee will repaire thither the next morning for an anſwer. *Valerio* claps the Letter into his pocket, awayting his maſters comming: but hee is ſo bad a husband to himſelfe, and ſo diſloyall, and vnkinde a one to his chaſte and faire wife, as hee was out all night with his Courtiſans, which good and vertuous Lady, euen pierceth her heart with griefe and ſorrow. Now *Valerio* ſeeing his Maſter abſent, his comming incertaine, and himſelfe inforced to goe fooorth about his affaires, he placeth the Letter vpon a Cupboard neere his maſters ſtudy, that it might be apparant to his eye when he came in, and ſo departs.

But here the mercy and prouidence of *God* inuites the *Chriſtian* Reader, to admire and wonder at the ſtrange diſcouery and detection of this Letter: for as *Albemare* (more for ſport then charitie) kept a man-foole of ſome fortie yeres old in his houſe, who indeed was ſo naturally peeuiſh, as not *Millan*, hardly *Italy*, could match him for ſimplicitie. It ſo chanced, that this harmeleſſe foole gate into the roome after *Valerio*, and ſaw him put vp this Letter on the cupboard: Now, as Children and Fooles may in ſome ſort be tearmed couſin germaine to Apes, ſo as ſoone as *Valerio* was departed, this foole (no doubt ledde wholly by the direction and finger of *God*, rather then

by his owne proper ignorance and ſimplicitie) gets into the chamber, and taking a ſtoole to aſcend the Cupboard, he brings away the Letter, which both in the hall and yard he toſſes and dandles in his hand, as if this newe found play gaue delight and content to his extrauagant and ſimple thoughts: when, behold our ſweet and vertuous *Clara* comming from Saint *Ambroſe* Church, where ſhe had been to here *Veſpres*, and ſeeing a faire letter faſt ſealed in the fooles hand, ſhee enquires of him from whence hee had it? who ſinging and hopping, and ſtill playing with the Letter, ſhee could get no other anſwere from him, but *That it was his Letter, and that God had ſent it him, that God had ſent it him:* which ſpeeches of his, he often redoubled. When *Clara* weighing his wordes, and conſidering out of whoſe mouth they came, her heart inſtantly began to grow, and her colour to riſe, as if *God* and her ſoule prompted her, that ſhee had ſome intereſt in that letter: wherupon ſnatching it from the foole, whom ſhe left crying in the Hall for the loſſe therof: ſhe ſeeing it directed to her Husband, goes to the parlor, attended by *Adriana*, & there ſitting down in a chaire, & breaking vp the ſeales therof, ſhe begins to read it; but when ſhe draws towards the concluſion thereof, and finds that it was her husband *Albemare's* who had cauſed her deare Louer and Friend *Baretano* to be murthered: then not able to containe her ſelfe for ſorrow, ſhe throwes her ſelfe on the floore, and weepes and ſighes ſo mournfully, as the moſt obdurateſt and flintieſt heart could not chooſe but relent into pitie to ſee her: for ſometimes ſhee lookt vp to heauen, and then againe dejecting her eyes to earth, now wringing her hands, and then croſſing her armes,

in ſuch diſconſolate and afflicted manner, as *Adriana* could not likewiſe refraine from teares to behold her: when after a deepe and profound ſilence, ſhee bandying and euaporating many volleys of far fetched ſighes into the ayre, ſhee commaunding *Adriana* forth, the doore ſhut, with the two extremities of paſſion and ſorrow, ſhe alone vtters theſe mournfull ſpeeches to her ſelfe:

And ſhall *Clara* liue to vnderſtand, that her *Baretano* was murthered for her ſake, and by her vnfortunate husband *Albemare*? and ſhall ſhe any more lye in bedde with him, who ſo inhumanely hath layen him in his vntimely and bloody graue? And *Clara, Clara*, wilt thou prooue ſo vngratefull to his memory, and to the tender affection he bore thee, as not to lament, not to ſeeke to reuenge this his diſaſterous and cruell end? when againe, her teares interrupting her words, and her ſighes her teares; ſhee entring into a further conſultation with her thoughts and Conſcience, her heart and her ſoule at laſt continues her ſpeech in this manner: O, but vnfortunate and wretched *Clara*, what ſpeakeſt thou of reuenge? for conſider with thy ſelfe, yea forget not to conſider, *Baretano* was but thy friend, *Albemare* is thy husband; the firſt loued thee in hope to marry thee, but thou art maried to the ſecond, and therefore thou muſt loue him; and although his ingratitude and infidelitie towards thee, make him vnworthy of thy affection; yet ye two are but one fleſh, and therefore conſider, that malice is a bad aduocate, and reuenge a worſe Iudge: But here againe remembring what a foule and odious crime murther was in the ſight of the Lord, that the diſcouery thereof infinitely tended to his glory and honour

honour, and that the poore Foole was doubtleſſe inſpired from heauen, to affirme that *God* ſent the letter: ſhe knowes that her bonds of conſcience to her *Sauiour*, muſt exceed and giue a law to thoſe of her dutie towards her husband; and therfore preferring Heauen before Earth, and God before her Husband, ſhee immediately calles for her Coach, and goes directly to *Baretano's* Vnckle, *Seignior Giouan de Montefiore*, and with ſighes and teares ſhewes him the letter, who formerly, though in vaine, had moſt curiouſly and exactly hunted to diſcouer the murtherers of his Nephew. *Monteſiore* firſt reads the letter with teares, then with ioy; and then turning towards the Lady *Clara*, he commends her zeale and Chriſtian fortitude towards *God*, in ſhewing her how much the diſcouery of this murther tended to his glory; and ſo preſently ſends away for the *Preſident Criminell*; who immediatly repayring thither, hee acquaints him therewith, ſhewes him the Letter, and prayes him to examin the Lady *Clara* thereon; which with much modeſty and equitie he doth, and then returnes with her to her houſe, and there likewiſe examineth the Foole where hee had the Letter: who out of his inciuilitie and ſimplicitie, takes the *Preſident* by the hand, and bringing him to the Cupboard, tells him, *Here God ſent the Letter, and here I found him:* when *Valerio* being preſent, and imagining by his Ladies heauy and ſorrowfull countenance, that this Letter had perhaps brought her into ſome affliction and danger, he looking on the direction of the Letter; as alſo on the Seale, he reueales both to the *Preſident*, and his *Lady*, that he receiued that Letter from one whom hee knew not, and that he left it purpoſely on the Cupboard

board for his Master against his comming. The *President* being fully satisfied herein, admires at *Gods* prouidence, reueiled in the simplicity of this poore harmlesse foole; in bringing this Letter, which brought the murther of *Baretano* to light (when knowing that *God* doth many times raise vp the foolish and weake to confound the wise & mightie things of the world) he presently grants out a Commission to apprehend *Albemare*; who being then found in bed with *Marina*, one of the most famous Beauties, and reputed Courtezans of *Millan*: Hee both astonished, and amazed, by the iust iudgement of God, is drawen from his beastly pleasures and adulteries to prison: where being charged to haue hyred *Pedro* and *Leonardo* to haue murthered *Baretano*, he stoutly denyes it. But *Leonardo's* letter being read him, and he thereon adiudged to the Racke, his Soule and Conscience ringing him many thundring peales of terrour, hee there at large confesseth it: when for this foule and bloody fact of his, hee the same afternoone is condemned to be hanged the next morning, at the common place of Execution, which administreth matter of talke, and admiration throughout all *Millan*, when Sericants are likewise sent away to *Pauia*, to bring *Leonardo* to *Millan*, who not so much as once dreamt or thought that euer this his letter would haue produced him this danger and misery.

And now *Albemare* aduertised of the manner how this Letter of *Leonardo* was brought to light, (without looking vp to Heauen from whence this vengeance iustly befell him for his sinnes) he curseth the crueltie of his wife, the simplicitie of the foole, but most bitterly exclaymeth against the remissenesse and

careleſneſſe of his ſeruant *Valerio*, in not retayning and keeping that letter, which is the only cauſe of his death: yea, hee is ſo farre tranſported with choller againſt him, as although he haue but a few houres to liue, yet he vowes he will aſſuredly cry quittance with him ere he die.

Now the charitie of his Iudges ſend him Diuines that night in priſon, to prepare and cleare his conſcience, and to confirme and fortifie his ſoule againſt the morne, in his laſt conflict with the world, and her flight and tranſmigration to heauen; who powerfully and religiouſly admoniſhing him, that if hee haue committed any other notorious offence or crime, he ſhould now doe well to reueale it: He likewiſe there and then confeſſeth, how he had cauſed his man *Valerio* to poyſon *Pedro* with wine in priſon, the very night before he was executed: whereupon this bloody and execrable wretch (according to his hellish deſerts) is likewiſe apprehended and impriſoned.

And now *Gods* mercy and iuſtice brings this vnfortunate (becauſe irreligious) Gentleman *Albemare* to receiue condigne puniſhment for thoſe his two horrible murthers, which he had cauſed to bee committed on the perſons of *Baretano* and *Pedro*, who aſcending the ladder in preſence of a world of ſpectators, who flocked from all parts of the Citie to ſee him take his laſt farewell of the world: The ſight and remembrance of his foule crimes, hauing now made him not onely ſorrowfull, but repentant, he briefly deliuered theſe few words:

He confeſſed, that he had hired *Pedro* and *Leonardo* to kill *Baretano* in the ſtreet, and ſeduced his ſeruant *Valerio* to poyſon *Pedro* in priſon, wherof with much griefe

griefe and contrition hee heartily repented himselfe, and besought the Lord to forgiue it him: he likewise besought *Leonardo* and *Valerio* to forgiue him, in respect hee knew he was the cause of their deaths; because hee was sure they should not long suruiue him. He likewise forgaue his Foole, as being assured, that it was not he in the Letter, but God in him that had reuealed the Letter for his iust punishment and confusion. And lastly, he with many teares forgaue his wife and Lady *Clara*, whom he affirmed from his heart, was by farre too vertuous for so dissolute and vild an husband as himselfe. He blamed himselfe, for neglecting to loue her; and cursed his Queanes and Courtezans, as being the chief cause of all his miseries, when requesting all that were present to pray for his soule, he was turned off.

But his Iudges seeing that he had added murther to murther, they held it Iustice to adde punishment to his punishment; and so he is no sooner cut downe, but they cause his body to be burnt, and his ashes to bee throwen into the ayre, which is accordingly performed.

Now, because the *Lord* in his Iustice, will punish aswell the Agents as the Authors of murther: whiles *Albemare* is acting the last *Seane* and *Catastrophie* of his *Tragidy*: His wretched hireling *Leonardo* and his execrable seruant *Valerio*, are likewise arraigned, found guilty, and condemned to be hang'd for their seuerall murthers of *Bartuno* and *Pedro*; and so the very same afternoone, they are brought to their Executioners, where *Leonardo* his former life and profession hauing made him know better how to sinne, then repent; hee out of a souldier-like bravery, (or rather

vanity) thinkes rather to terrifie death, then that death ſhould terrifie him; hee begging pardon for his ſinnes in generall of God and the world, and then bidding the hangman doe his office, hee takes his laſt adiew of the world.

When immediately *Valerio* aſcends the ladder, who hauing repentance in his heart, and griefe and ſorrow in his lookes; as neere as could be obſerued and gathered, ſpake theſe words:

That being poore both in friends and meanes, the onely hope of preferment vnder his maſter, made him at his requeſt to poyſon *Pedro* in priſon; That many times ſince he hath heartily grieued for it, and now from his very ſoule repents himſelfe of it, and beſeeching the Lord to forgiue it him, That he was as guilty of this murther, as innocent of *Baretano's*; yea, or of the knowledge thereof, before his maſter was impriſoned for the ſame, and that as this was his firſt Capitall crime, ſo ſith he muſt now die, he reioyced it was his laſt, and ſo praying all ſeruants to beware by his miſerable example not to be ſeduced to commit murther, either by their maſters, or the deuil; and beſeeching all that were preſent to pray for his ſoule, he reſigning and commending it into the hands of his Redeemer, was likewiſe turned off.

And theſe were the miſerable (yet deſerued) ends of theſe bloody murtherers; and thus did Gods iuſtice and reuenge, triumphe ouer their crimes, and themſelues, by heaping and rayning downe confuſion on their heads from heauen, when the deuill (faſly) made them beleeue they ſate ſecure; yea, when they leaſt dreamt thereof on earth: Oh that the ſight and remembrance of their puniſhments may reſtraine and deterre

deterre vs from conspiring and committing the like crimes: so shall wee liue fortunate, and die happie; whereas they died miserably, because they liued impiously and prophanely.

And heere fully to conclude and shut vp this History, and therein as I thinke to giue some satisfaction to the curiosity of the Reader, who may perchance desire to know what became after of the fayre and vertuous *Clara*. Why her sorrowes were so infinite, and their quality and *Nature* so sorrowfull, as being weary of the world, and as it were weighed downe with the incessant vanities, crosses and afflictions thereof: she (notwithstanding the power and perswasions of her parents) assumes her former resolution, to retire and sequester her selfe from conuersing with the world, and so enters into the *Nunnery of the Annuntiation* (so famous in *Millan*) where for ought I know, or can since vnderstand to the contrary: she yet liues a pensiue and solitarie sister.

THE TRIVMPHS OF GODS REVENGE Against the crying and execrable *Sinne of Murther.*

Hiſtory XIII.

La Vaſſelay poyſoneth her Wayting-mayd Gratiana, *becauſe ſhee is ielous that her husband* De Merſon *is diſhoneſt with her, whereupon ſhee liues from her: In reuenge whereof, ſhe cauſeth his man* La Villete *to murther him in a Wood, and then marries him in requitall. The ſayd* La Villete *a yeare after riding through the ſame wood, his Horſe falles with him, and almoſt kills him; when he confeſſeth the murther of his maſter* De Merſon, *and accuſeth his wife* La Vaſſelay *to be the cauſe thereof. So for theſe their bloody crimes, he is hanged, and ſhe burnt aliue.*

HOw falſly, nay how impiouſly doe we tearme our ſelues *Chriſtians*, when vnder that glorious and ſanctified *Title*, we ſeeke to prophane and deface the glory of *Chriſt*, in cruelly murthering our brethren his members; effects, not of *Zeale*, but of Rage; not of *Pietie*, but of Madneſſe, inuented by the Deuill, and perpetrated by none but by

by his Agents, lamentable effects; yea, I say, bloody and infernall crimes, which still ruine those who contriue and confound those who finish them: For let vs but looke from *Earth* to *Heauen*, from *Sathan* to *God*, from *Nature* to *Grace*, and from our Hearts to our Soules, and we shall assuredly find it very difficult for vs to define, whether *Charitie* be a sweeter *Vertue*, or *Malice* a fouler *Vice*, whether that be more secure, or this pernitious, fatall, and dangerous; whether that bee a more apparant testimony of *Gods* sauing *Grace* towards vs, or this of our owne inexitable perdition, and reprobation. And as it is an odious sinne, and displeasing sacrifice in the sight of *God*, for a stranger to kill another: O then how much more execrable and diabolicall must it be, for a *Gentlewoman* to poyson her Wayting-mayd, and for a seruant to pistoll his master to death, at the instigation of the same *Gentlewoman* his wife: for murthers, no lesse ingratefull and cruell, doth this subsequent *History* report and relate: wherin we shall see, that *God* in the *Triumphs* of his reuenging *Iustice*, and out of his sacred and secret prouidence, hath in all poynts made their punishments as sharpe and seuere as their crimes were bloody, and deplorable: May wee then reade it to *Gods* glory, and our owne consolation, which we shall assuredly performe, if wee hate the like crimes in others, and detest them in our selues.

IN the faire and pleasant Citie of *Mans*, (being the chiefe and Capitall of the Prouince of *Maine* in *France*, in the very latter yeares that the *Marshall* of *Boys-Dauphin* was Gouernor thereof, vnder the present King *Lewes XIII.* his master) there dwelt a *Gentlewoman*

tlewoman (aged of threescore and three yeares) tearmed *La Vasselay*, being well descended, and left very rich, (as well in lands, as mooueables) by her late deceased husband; *Monsier Froyset*, who was slaine in the behalfe of the *Queene* Mother, in the defence of *Pont de Sey*, assaulted and taken by the *King* her sonne. Now although this olde widdow *La Vasselay* (in respect of her *Age*) was farre more fit to seek *God* in the *Church*, then a new *Husband* in her bed; yet she is weary of a single life, although it be not fully six moneths since shee had buried her second husband; (for the Reader must vnderstand, she had formerly buried her first, at least fiue and twentie yeares before, and is now againe resolued to take a third) and albeit shee knew that the ciuilitie of the widdows in *France*, was such, that they seldome marry, but almost neuer within the tearme of a whole yeare; yet her conceit and fancie thinks it not onely lawfull, but fit to breake this too austere custome; and therefore she peremptorily resolues to liue a wife, and not to dye a widdow. But this resolution of hers, were she either in the *Summer* or the *Autumne* of her yeares, had been as excusable and praise-worthy, as now it sauoured of vndecency and inconstancy, sith shee was in the Winter thereof: For *Age*, despight of her *Youth*, and youthfull desires, had throwen snow on her head, and new dyed the colour of her haire from black to white; yea, she was so farre from retayning any signes or reliques of an indifferent beautie, as the furrowes of her face could not iustly shew any ruines or demolutions therof; and yet (forsooth) she will marry againe. Now her Birth and wealth, rather then her *Vertues* and personage, inuite many old widdowers, and some rich *Gentlemen*

and

and Counsellors of the famous *Presidiall* Court of that Citie to seeke her in marriage; and indeed, both for lands and money, none her inferiours, but all at least her equals, and some her betters: But in vaine, for the vanitie of her thought, suggest her, that either she is too young for them, or they too old for her; and therefore she will haue none of them: yea, her lust seemes so youthfully to giue a law to her age, and the lye to her yeares, as she casts off her mourning attire, deckes her selfe vp in gay apparell, powders her hayre, paynts her face, with a resolution (forsooth) to haue no old *Dotard*, but a young Gallant to her husband, as if therein she wholly placed, not only her content, but her felicitie: But we many times see such irrigular desires, and such incontinent designes, met with vnexpected misery, and vnthought of repentance.

Now during the time, that the vaine carriage & deportment of this old *Gentlewoman* & widdow *La Vasselay*, made her selfe the laughture, and by-word of all *Mans*; home comes a young *Gentleman* of this Countrey of *Maine*, tearmed *Monsieur de Merson*, from his trauell in *Italy*, whose Father dwelt betwixt *La Vall*, and *Grauelle*, tearmed *Monsieur de Manfrelle*, being a Gentleman well descended and rich, and to whom *De Merson* was second sonne, who in a yeares absence in *Italie*, being purposely sent thither by his father to inrich his experience and capacitie (which is the true essence and glory of a traueller, thereby to be the more capable to serue his *Prince* and *Countrey*, as also to be a comfort to his age & a second prop to his house and lynage) hee had made such poore and vnprofitable vse of his trauels, as forgetting the obtay-

ning of the Language and all generous exercises, perfections and quallities (so requisite and gracefull in Gentlemen) he delighted in nothing so much; nay, in nothing else, but to passe his time with *Courtisans* and strumpets, especially in *Venice*, *Rome*, and *Naples*; where for his sakes, and their lasciuious pleasures he built vp the greatest part of his Residence; where he so prodigally spent and exceeded his Fathers exhibition; as he returnes into *France*, not loden with *Vertues* and *Experience*, but with *Vices* and *Debts*; being otherwise ignorant in all things which hee should know, and knowing nothing but that wherein he should be ignorant. Onely to the end he might thereby set the better counterfeit tincture on himselfe, and false lustre on his *Endowments* and *Profficiency*, he superficicially brought away, or rather borowed some *Italian* phrases, and complements, which hee thought would not only passe currant with the Gentlemen and Ladies of *France*, but also draw them into admiration, aswell of himselfe as them: When immediatly vpon his arriuall, that he might the better see and make himselfe seene of the world, he flaunts it out in braue apparrell, both in *L'auall*, *Angiers*, and *Mans*; Yea, there is scarce any great feast or marriage in all those parts: but if he be not enuited, yet he purposely enuites himselfe thereat, thereby to make himselfe the more conspicuous and apparant to the eyes of the world, especiall of the *Ladies* and *Gentlewomen*, in whose acquaintance and fauour, he not only endeauours to initiate, but striues to ingraft himselfe: But his olde Father *Manfrelle* iudiciously obseruing the vaine behauiour, and light deportment and carriage of this his sonne, he exceedingly grieues

thereat,

thereat, becauſe he had well hoped, that his trauels would haue returned him, as capable and diſcreet, as now he finds him ignorant, and which is worſe, deboſhd; ſith he well knew that either of theſe two vices was enough ſufficient and powerfull, not only to ruine his reputation, but his fortunes.

Againe, to adde more ſorrowes to his griefe, and more diſcontent to his ſorrowes for the vanitie and leuity of this his ſonne, euery weeke, nay almoſt euery day, brings him in new bils of his debts; a third falling in vpon the necke of the firſt and ſecond, and a fourth on the third: which being greater then his eſtate, or at leaſt his pleaſure would permit him to pay; he takes his ſonne *De Merſon* aſide, & very ſharply checkes him for his old and new prodigalities: vowes that he will neither ſell or morgage his lands to diſcharge his fooliſh debts; and therefore bids him looke to ſatisfie them, for that hee is reſolued not to ſee, much leſſe, not to ſpeake with any of his Creditors, how great, or ſmall ſoeuer the ſummes be he owes them. This cooling card of *Manfrelles* makes his ſonne *De Merſon*, not onely bite his lippes for ſorrow, but hange his head for anger and vexation, yea, his folly doth ſo ecclipſe and ouerwaile his iudgement herein, as in ſtead of making good vſe hereof, he takes a contrary reſolution, and ſo reſolues to embrace and follow the worſt: for whereas hee ſhould haue made his pride and prodigality ſtrike ſaile, and now rather ſeeke to reintegrate himſelfe into his Fathers fauour, then any way futurely attempt to incenſe or exaſperate him againſt him; he onely taking counſell of his *Tenth*, *Paſſions*, and *Choller*, (which as falſe and treacherous guides moſt commonly lead vs

to misery and repentance:) againe precipitates and ingulphes himselfe afresh in new debts, both with his *Vsurer*, *Mercer*, and *Taylor*: and no longer able to digest his Fathers checkes and frownes: he very inconsiderately and rashly packes vp his bagage, leaues his house, rides to *Mans*, & there resolus to passe his time that winter: partly hoping that his Father will discharge his debts in his absence: but more especially to becom acquainted with the beauties of that City, therby to obtain some rich yong heire, or old widow for his wife, whose estate and wealth might support his pride, and maintaine his excessiue prodigalitie & voluptuousnesse: and indeed although the two former of these his hopes deceiue him; yet he shall shortly finde and see, that the third and last will not.

Liuing thus in *Mans*, the brauery of his apparell and equipage, the freenesse of his expences, his comely talke, personage, blacke beard, and sanguin complexion makes him assoone acquainted and affected, as knowen of many Ladies and Gentlewomen, and far the more, because they know his father *De Manfrelle*, to be a very antient and rich *Gentleman* of that Countrey of *Maine*, and although he is not his heire, yet in regard he is his second sonne, as also a Traueller, he was the more honoured and respected of all those he frequented: so that the very fame and name of *Monsier de Merson* began to be already diuulged and knowen in the Citie; yea, and because he was a great *Balladine*, or *Dancer*, there was no solemn assembly, either publique or priuate, but still *De Merson* made one; and there was not a reputed beauty, or supposed courteous Lady in *Mans*, or thereabouts, but such was his vanity, as he soone wrought and insi-

sinuated himselfe into her acquaintance and familiaritie, the which he made not onely his delight, but his glory. And although that in a small time, the wiser sort of the *Gentlemen* and *Ladies* of the City found his wit and experience to come infinitely short of his braue apparell; yet the more illiterate and ignorant of them, (who esteeme all men by their lustre, not by their braue worth) as preferring gay apparell and the comelinesse of the body before the exquisite indowments, and perfections of the mind; they hold him in so high a repute and esteeme, as they thinke him to be the most absolute *Gallant*, not onely of *Mans*, but of all the Countrey of *Maine*; so easie it is to captiuate the conceits and iudgements of those who only build their iudgements in their conceits, and not their conceits in iudgement.

And of this ranke and number was our old widdow *La Vasselay*, who hauing many times heard of *De Mersons* fame, and comely personage, and seene him once at a sermon, and twice at two seuerall Nuptiall feasts, where his skill and agilitie proued him to be one of the prime dauncers, shee is so farre in loue with him, as in her thoughts and heart, she wisheth she had giuen halfe her estate and dowrie, conditionally that she were his wife, and he her husband: yea, she is so rauished with the comelinesse of his feature, and the sweetnesse of his complexion and countenance; as all the world is not halfe so deare to her as *De Merson*, nor any man whatsoeuer by many thousand degrees, so dilitious to her eye, & pleasing to her heart & soule as himselfe. And although she be in the frozen *Zone* of her age, yet her intemperate lust maks her desires so youthfully intemperate, as forgetting

reason and modestie, (that the best vertue of our soule, and this the chiefest ornament of our body) shee a thousand times wisheth, that either *De Merson* were impalled in her armes, or shee incloystered in his.

But doting (yea I may well neere truely say) dying old Gentlewoman, is this a time for thee to think of a young *Husband*, when one of thy old feet is as it were in thy graue? or being in thy *Clymactericall* yeare of threescore & three, art thou yet so fraughted with lewity, & exempt of continency, as thou wilt needs seek to marry one of fiue and twentie? Foolish *La Vasselay*, if it bee not now time, yea high time for thee to sacrifice thy desires to continency, when will it be, if euer be? Didst thou resolue to wed a husband neere of thine owne age, and so to end the remainder of thy dayes with him, in chast and holy wedlocke, that resolution of thine were as excusable, as this in desiring so young a one, is worthy, not onely of blame, but of reprehension, and I may say of pitie. Consider, consider with thy selfe, what a preposterous attempt and enterprise is this of thine, that when thou shouldest finish thy dayes in deuotion and prayer, thou then delightest to begin them in concupiscence, and lust. O *La Vasselay*, mocke at those rebellious and treacherous pleasures of the flesh, which seeme to mocke at thee, yea, to betray thee: and if there bee yet any sparke of thy youth, which lies burning vnder the embers of thy age, why if thy chaste thoughts cannot, yet let modesty, or at least pietie extinguish them. *God* hath already giuen thee two husbands; is it not now therefore time, yea, more then time, for thee to prepare to giue thy selfe to *God*. Hitherto

the

the chastitie of thy youth hath made thee happy; and wilt thou now permit, that the lust of thine age make thee vnfortunate, or peraduenture miserable; and that the puritie and candeur of that be distained and polluted by the foulenesse and obscenitie of this. *Alas, alas*, incontinent and inconsiderate *Gentlewoman*, of a graue Matron, become not a youthfull Giggler; or if thou wilt not suffer the eyes of thy body, at least permit not those of thy soule to looke from thy painted cheekes, to thy snow-white haire, who can informe and tell thee, that thou art far fitter for Heauen then earth, sith those pleasures are transitory, and these eternall, for *God*, then a husband, sith he onely can make thee blessed, whereas (in reward of thy lasciuious lust) this peraduenture may bee reserued to make thee both vnfortunate and wretched.

But the vanitie of this old *Gentlewomans* thoughts and desires, doe so violently fix and terminate, on the youth and beautie of young, and (as she immodestly tearmes him) faire *De Merson*, as the onely consideration of her delight and pleasure, weighes downe all other respects: so that neither Reason nor Modestie, aduise nor perswasion, can preuaile with her resolution, to diuert her affection from him; but loue him shee doth, and (which is repugnant as well to the instinct of Nature, as to the influence of modestie, and rules of ciuilitie) seeke him for her husband she will: yea, she is already become so sottish in her affection, and so lasciuiously feruent in her desires towards him, that her heart thinkes of him by day, her soule by night; that admires him as the very life of her felicitie, and thus adores him, as the onely content and glory of her life: shee will not see the greatnesse of her

her owne eſtate and wealth, nor conſider the ſmallneſſe of his meanes and hopes, in that hee is not an heire, but a ſecond brother; ſhe will not enquire after his debts and vices, to know what thoſe may be, what theſe are; ſhe will not thinke what a prepoſterous diſparitie there is betwixt the fire of his youth, and the ice of her age; nor what a world of diſcontents and afflictions are incident to proceed thereof: ſhee will not conſider, that in endowing him with all her wealth, that ſhe therby impouerisheth many, as well of her owne kindred, as of thoſe of her two former husbands, to whom in the right of *Nature* it more iuſtly and properly belongs: and to conclude and ſhut vp this poynt, ſhee will not imagine or dreame, to how many laughters, and ſcandalls of the world ſhee expoſeth her ſelfe, who will not onely call her diſcretion, but her modeſtie in queſtion, for matching with ſo young a *Gentleman* as *De Merſon*, to whom for age, ſhee may not onely well bee mother, but, (which is more) grandmother: But contrariwiſe, this fooliſh old *Gentlewoman*, hauing ſent her witts a wooll-gathering on his ſweet and comely perſonage; his youth and her affection, like two impetuous torrents, and furious inundations, beare downe all other reſpects and conſiderations before them: yea, they ſo ſubmerge her reaſon, and quite drowne her diſcretion, as ſhee hath no eyes vnſhut to ſee the one, nor eares vnſtopped to heare the other: ſo that if ſhee deſire any thing in the world, it is (as formerly is obſerued) that ſhee liue to ſee *De Merſon* her husband, and her ſelfe his wife: which to effect and accompliſh, ſhe knowes no better nor fitter *Agent* to imploy herein, then one *Monſieur de Prunean*, an ancient *Conn-*

cellour

cellour of the *Preſidiall Court* of that Citie, who was the onely *Councellor* both to her laſt husband, and her ſelfe, and of whoſe diſcretion, integritie and fidelitie, ſhe had all the reaſons of the world to reſt confident and aſſured.

Now although the *Wiſdome* and *Experience* of *De Pruneau* ſuggeſted him what an extreame inequalitie there was betwixt *De Merſons* youth, and *La Vaſſelays* age, which he could not more pertinently paralell and compare, then to Winter and Summer, the Spring and the Harueſt: and therfore how many afflictions and miſeries were ſubiect to attend and wait on ſuch prepoſterous mariages, whereof he had formerly ſeene diuers lamentable examples, and wofull inſtances as well of men as women, who had ſuffered ſhipwrack vpon that *Sylla* & this *Charybdis*, he like an honeſt man, and indeed a truer friend to her, then ſhe was to her ſelfe, produceth ſome of the former alledged reaſons to her conſideration, thereby to diuert the ſtreame of her ill grounded affection from *De Merſon*, and (in generall tearmes) to conuey and conduct it to ſome elder perſonage, whoſe yeares (and therefore their diſpoſitions and affections) might the better agree and ſympathize. But when he ſees that her loue to *De Merſon* was ſo firmly and immoueably ſetled, as that it not onely appeared to him, to be her griefe, but her torment to be any way croſſed or contradicted therein: then he changeth his language, and becauſe ſhe will not hearken to his aduiſe, he therfore giues way to her reſolution, promiſing her his vtmoſt power, and beſt endeauors ſpeedily to effect and compaſſe her deſires; when taking leaue each of other, at laſt *La Vaſſelay* remembring ſhe had forgotten ſome

thing, calles him againe, and prayes him, that if *De Merſon* be inquiſitiue to know her direct age, that he ſubſtract away at leaſt ten yeares thereof; ſo that whereas ſhe is ſixtie three, to affirme that ſhee is very little aboue fiftie: whereunto ſhe her ſelfe bluſhing, *De Pruneau* not able likewiſe to refraine from ſmiling, promiſeth her to be very mindfull thereof. To which end, he (with the firſt conueniency finds out *De Merſon*, acquaints him how much hee is obliged to *Madamoyſelle La Vaſſelay*, for her affection to him, layes before him the Nobilitie of her diſcent, and blood, the greatneſſe of her *Eſtate* and meanes, as alſo the excellency of her vertues; that fiftie yeares is the moſt of her age, and that ſhe is not by farre ſo old, as pleaſing and louely; that ſhee affects him aboue all the men of the world, yea, and deſires no man of the world for her husband but himſelfe; and that when he pleaſeth, ſhe deſires the honour of his company to her houſe, with many other intimations, and inſinuations conducing that way.

De Merſon hauing formerly vnderſtood of *La Vaſſelays* rich *Eſtate* and *Dowry*, as alſo of the truth of her age; he likes the firſt well, and although he diſtaſt, yet he will diſſemble the ſecond: he thanks *De Pruneau* for his paines, and *La Vaſſelay* for her loue towards him; promiſeth to requite the firſt, and if her wealth and vertues correſpond with his relation to deſerue the ſecond; alleaging further, that although there be a great inequalitie in their age, yet ſith hee is no heire but a ſecond brother, that it is rather likely then impoſſible, for it to be a match betwixt them; and in the meane time, to requite part of her affection, he promiſeth to Sup with her the night following at her houſe,

houſe, where he onely deſires his company and aſſiſtance, that they may the more effectually and ſecretly conſult of this buſineſſe, which he hopes will ſo much import as well her good and his content, as her content and his good: and ſo for that time they part.

De Pruneau hauing receiued this pleaſing and diſcreet anſwere from *De Merſon*, he returnes with the relation, and repetition thereof to *La Vaſſelay*, vowes that his exteriour feature is no way anſwerable, but comes farre ſhort of his interior Vertues and diſcretion; and that by all which, hee eyther can collect from his ſpeeches, or gather from his deportment and behauiour, he is in his conceit the moſt accompliſhed *Gentleman*, not onely of *Maine*, but of *France*; and ſo bids her prepare her Supper, and her ſelfe to entertaine him the next night. Which anſwere of *De Merſons*, and relation of *De Pruneau*, is ſo pleaſing to her heart and thoughts, as her age ſeemes to bee already rauiſhed with ioy at the conceyt of his Youth: when thinking euery minute a moneth, and euery houre a yeare, before ſhee be made happy, and her houſe bleſſed with his preſence, ſhee leaues no coſt vnſpared, or vnſpent, to make his Entertainement anſwerable to his welcome: whereof whiles ſhee is not onely carefull, but curious in prouiding, let vs curſorily ſpeake a word or two how *De Merſon* entertaines and digeſteth this vnexpected motion and affection of *La Vaſſelay*.

He laughes in his ſleeue to ſee her youthfull affections ſo flouriſhing in this *Autumne*, nay, in this *Winter* of her age, as to deſire and ſeeke ſo young a *Gentleman* as himſelfe for her husband, but he vnderſtands ſhe is

exceeding rich, and therefore reſolues that this vertue is capable to ouervalue and ranſome that defect and error of hers. He ſees that his father will not pay his debts, and that he of himſelfe cannot; that they growing more clamorous, will ſhortly become ſcandalous: which will not onely directly preuent, but infallibly ruine his fortunes. He conſidereth how diſpleaſing her age will be to his youth, as alſo that there is no hell comparable to that of a diſcontented bed, and then againe, his deboſht and luſtfull thoughts, ſuggeſt him this remediy: That *Mans* hath beautie enough for him to recreate himſelfe, and to paſſe his time with; and that although ſhe haue him ſometimes in her bed, yet he may haue younger laſſes and Ladies in his armes, both when, and where he pleaſeth: He conſidereth that rich widdowes are not ſo ſoone found, as ſought, nor ſo ſoone obtained as found; and that if he refuſe *La Vaſſelay* this day, he may not onely repent it to morrow, but perchance all the dayes of his life; and although his will may, his power ſhall not be able to repaire or redreſſe this error of his, all his life after: He is not ignorant that *Gentlewomen* of her age and wealth, are ſubiect to be as ſoone loſt as won in a humor: and therefore then loſt, becauſe not then won. Againe that the elder ſhe is, the ſooner ſhe will die, and he then is at liberty to marry as young a *Virgin* as he pleaſeth, and that her wealth would then proue a true proppe, and ſweet comfort to his age. And to conclude and finiſh this conſultation of his, ſhe is without children to moleſt and trouble him, and therefore to be deſired, ſhe is vertuous, diſcreet, and of an excellent fame and reputation, and therefore deſerues to bee accepted and not refuſed.

Vpon

Vpon the grounds of which reasons and considerations, he makes good his promise to *De Pruneau*, and comes the next night both to visite, & suppe with *La Vasselay*; who hauing purposely deckt her selfe vp in her youthfull and gayest apparell; receiues him, withall demonstrations of affection and ioy. At his first arriuall he affords her two or three kisses, whereat she infinitely both reioyceth and triumpheth: and in a word, he finds that his welcome not onely exceeds his deserts, but his expectation; and beleeue me it was woorth the obseruation, to see how superficially his youth looked on her age, and how artificially and lustfully her age gazed on his youth. Now, by this time supper is serued in, wherein her affection was againe discouered him in the curiosity and bounty thereof. Where *De Pruneau* to giue life to their mirth, tells them both, that he hopes this their first meeting and enteruiew will produce effects answerable to both their contents and desires; Whereat *De Merson* cannot refraine from blushing, nor *La Vasselay* from smiling: They are all very pleasant and iocond at table, and she to giue the better edge and relish to his affection, striues to seeme farre younger then indeed she is, and then he knowes her to be; yea, she doth so cunningly entermixe and dispierce youthfull speeches amidst her aged grauity, as if she were not old, or at least, newly made young. Now whiles she feasted her eyes on his fresh countenance and faire complexion, he sends his abroad to looke on her plate, rich hangings, and houshold-stuffe, wherwith he saw her house was richly and plentifully furnished: Supper ended, and the cloth taken away, they are no sooner fallen from their Viands, but they fall

to their talke. *De Merſon* kindly and familiarly taking his new old *Miſtris* in his *Armes*, as if he had already giuen her a place in his heart and affections: which makes her beyond her ſelfe, both merry and ioyfull. I will not trouble the Reader with the repetition of what ſpeeches and complements here paſt betwixt them: becauſe in this, and my future Hiſtories I will follow the ſame Methode of breuity which I haue propoſed and obſerued in my former. Let then his inquiſitiue curioſitie vnderſtand, that they parted very louingly and affectionately this firſt time: and *De Merſon* although he were a deboſhed *Gentleman*, yet he is not ſo ſimple to omit, but rather ſo well aduiſe to prie into the true depth, and naked truth of her eſtate, and the rather, for that he hath knowen many *Gentlemen* who haue been fete'd ouer, and gull'd in this nature, and in marrying one widow haue match't themſelues to two theeues, and credulouſly thinking her rich, haue in the end found her a very begger: Whereupon he takes three dayes reſpite to reſolue, and ſo with ſome kiſſes and many thankes for her affection, and her kind entertainment and great cheere, he for that night takes his leaue of her, whoſe fayre carriage and diſcreet reſolution in temporizing, *La Vaſſday* applauds, and *De Pruneau* approues: So *De Merſon* hauing ſpent the firſt and ſecond day in ſurueying the writings of her Dowry, the Leaſes of her lands and houſes, and the Bonds and Bils of debts due to her, with all her ready Money, Plate, and other moueables: he finds her eſtate to anſwere his expectation and her report, and that ſhe is really worth in land, ſix thouſand Francks yerely, and her moueables worth at leaſt eighteene thouſand more, he the third

day

day publiquely contracts himselfe to her, and hauing aduertised his father thereof, who likes the wealth better then the widdow, within eight dayes after priuately marries her, which administreth cause of speech and wonder in and about *Mans:* some blaming her of indiscretion and lenity, to match so young a *Gentleman*, others taxing him of folly to marry so old a widdow; some extolling and applauding his iudgement, in enriching himselfe with so great an Estate: which would not onely deface his debts, secure his youth and age from the stormes of want, and the tempests of necessity, but also in the one and the other maintaine him richly, prosperously, and gallantly. And others againe beleeuing and presaging, that this their great inequality and disparity of yeares, would either of the one side or other, or both, produce many discontents, & afflictions, instead of hoped-for ioyes and prosperities. Thus euery one speakes differently of this preposterous match, according as their passions and fancies dictate them: but which of all these opinions and iudgements speakes truest, we shall not goe farre to vnderstand and know.

We haue seene the consummation of this marriage, *Youth* wedded to *Age*; *May* to *December*, and young *De Merson* to old *La Vasselay*; in which contract & nuptials, either of them are so vaine, and both so irreligious, as caring wholly for the pleasures of their bodies, they haue not therein so much as once thought of their soules, or of heauen: Yea, *God* is not so much as once nominated or remembred of them. All the ends of marriages are onely two; *Gods glory*, and the propagation of children; and because they cannot hope for the second, must they therfore needs

be

be so impious, as to forget the first. *Aye me*, if his youth had attained no more Grace, could her age retaine no more goodnesse; or how can they flatter themselues with any hope, that this marriage of theirs can possible prosper, when onely her ayme and end therein is lust, and his wealth. If a building can subsist and flourish, which hath a rotten and reeling foundation, then this match of theirs may prosper, otherwise cannot: for what more rottē thē the beastly pleasures of her lustfull, and yet decayed age, & what more reeling and fickle, then the constant inconstancy of his laciuious youth, which make my thoughts iustly feare, and my heart truely presage and apprehend: that repentance, not pleasure; affliction, not ioy; misery, not prosperity, is at the heeles to attend and follow these their Nuptials: As marke we the sequell and it will briefly informe vs how.

De Merson hath not beene married two whole moneths to *La Vasselay*, but hee begins to repent himselfe that euer hee matched her, for he now sees, though before he would not, that it is impossible for youth to fedge and sympathise with her age, he sees that she hath a decrepit, sickly and decayed body, and that she is neuer free of the Cough and Rheume, as also of an Issue in her left arme, which is not only displeasing, but loathsome to him. Yea, when shee hath taken off her ruffe and head attire, and dighted her selfe in her night habilements, then he vowes he is afraid of her Lambe-skin furred cap and wast-coate; and takes her withered face for a *Vizard*, or a *Commet*, which yeelds no delight but terror to his eyes: swearing that he serues onely for a bed-pan to heat her frozen body, which of it selfe is farre colder then

a

a *Marble Statue:* Yea, he is so farre out of loue with her, because, to write the truth, he neuer truely loued her, that her sight is a plague to him, her presence by day a Purgatory, and her company by night a very Hell.

But debosshed and dissolute *Gentleman*, these vitious and impious conceits of thine', come immediatly from *Hell* and *Sathan*, and are no way infused in thy thoughts by *Heauen*, much lesse inspired in thy heart by *God*: Consider, consider with thy selfe, that if *La Vasselay* be old, yet she is now thy wife, and that whatsoeuer *De Praneau* or her selfe informed thee of fiftie yeares: Yet thou knowest she could not be lesse then sixtie three, and more she is not. In which regard marriage (the holy Institution of *Heauen*) hauing now made you of two, one; if thou wilt not loue her age, at least thou sholdest reuerence it; or if thou canst not affect her, thou shouldest not hate her. Hath she imperfections, what woman in the world liues without them? or is she pestered with diseases, who can be either exempted from them, or preuent them? Thou hast vowed in the Temple of the Lord, and in the presence of him and his people, not onely to loue, but to honour her: and is thy inconstancy and impiety already such, as forgetting that promise and vowe of thine, thou dost now not onely dishonour, but despise and contemne her; and that thou onely madest that vow purposely to breake it: O *De Merson*, if thou art not capable of Counsel, yet do but beleeue the truth, and thou wilt find, that if thou wilt not loue her, because she is too old to be thy wife; yet thou shouldest respect and regard her, because she is old enough to be thy Grandmother: for as it is inciuility not to re-

uerence *Age*; ſo it is impietie to diſdaine and maligne it: and if in any man towards a meere ſtranger, how much more a husband to his owne wife? And becauſe it is eaſier to eſpy our wiues imperfections, then to finde out, or reforme our owne; if thy wife *La Vaſſelay* bee guiltie of any fault towards thee, it is becauſe ſhee loues thee too well, and affects thee too dearely.

We haue ſeene *De Merſons* diſtaſte of his wife, *La Vaſſelay*: Let vs now ſee how ſhee likes, or rather why ſhe ſo ſoone diſlikes him: for he beares himſelfe ſo ſtrangely, and withall, ſo vnkindly towards her; as her deſires of his youth comes farre ſhort both of her expectation and hopes: for if hee lye with her one night, he wanteth fixe from her; is ſtill abroad, and ſeldome or neuer at home with her; yea, hee is of ſuch a gadding humour, and ranging diſpoſition, as his thoughts and delights are tranſported elſewhere, not at home; with other young Dames of *Mans*, not with her ſelfe: and the vanitie of his pleaſures doe ſo farre ſurprize and captiuate him, that he is already become ſo vitious, as he makes day his night, and night his day, liuing rather like a voluptuous *Epicure*, then a temperate or *Ciuill Chriſtian*: Neither, quoth ſhee, is it Iealouſie, but truth which makes her prie ſo narrowly into his lewd and laſciuious actions, wherein the further ſhee wades, the more cauſe ſhee finds both of griefe and vexation, which makes her wiſh, that ſhee had beene blind when ſhee firſt ſaw him; and eyther he or her ſelfe in *Heauen*, when they ſo vnfortunately marryed each other here vpon *Earth*.

How now fond and fooliſh olde *Gentlewoman*, are

thy ioyes ſo ſoone conuerted into ſorrowes, and thy tryumphes into teares? why, thou haſt iuſt cauſe to thanke none but thy ſelfe, for theſe thy croſſes and afflictions; ſith thy luſtfull and laſciuious deſires were not onely the author, but the procurer of them: for hadſt thou been more modeſt, and leſſe wanton, thou mighteſt haue apparantly ſeene, and prouidently foreſeene, that *De Merſons* youth was too young for thy age, becauſe thy age was too old for his youth; ſo that hadſt thou beene then but halfe ſo ſtayed and wiſe, as now thou art ſorrowfull: thou needeſt not now grieue for that which thou canſt not redreſſe, nor repent for that which is out of thy power to remedy. But raſh & inconſiderate woman, how comes this to paſſe, that thou art ready to entertaine Ielouſie, when death ſtands ready to entertaine thee? Could all the courſe of thy former youth be ſo happy, not to be acquainted with this vice, and doth now thy frozen age thinke it a vertue to admit and embrace it? Ay mee, I grieue to ſee thy folly, and lament to vnderſtand thy madneſſe in this kind: for what is Ielouſie, but the rage of our thoughts, and braines, the diſturber of our peace and tranquilitie, the enemy of our peace and happineſſe, the traytour of our iudgement and vnderſtanding, the plague of our life, the poyſon of our hearts, and the very bane and Canker of our ſoules? Ielouſie, why, it is the daughter of frenzie, and the mother of madneſſe; it is a vice purpoſely ſent from hell, to make thoſe wretched on earth, who may liue fortunate and happy, and yet will not; yea, it is a vice which I know not whether it be more eaſie to admit, or difficult to expell, being admitted. But *La Vaſſelay*, expell it thou

muſt, at leaſt, if thou thinke to liue fortunate, and not to die miſerable. Were thou as young as aged, thy Ielouſie might haue ſome colour and excuſe in meeting with the cenſures of the world; whereas now not deſeruing the one, it cannot receiue the other. And as thoſe women are both wiſe and happy, who winke at the youthfull eſcapes of their husbands: ſo thy Ielouſie makes thee both meritorious, and guiltie of thy afflictions, becauſe thou wilt bee ſo fooliſh to eſpy, and ſo malicious to remember theſe of thine. Is *De Merſon* giuen and addicted to other women? why pardon him, becauſe he is a young man: and as he is thy husband, and thou his wife, beleeue that he is euery way more worthy of thy prayers, then of thine enuie.

Thus we ſee vpon what fatall and ominous termes theſe late maried couple now ſtand; *De Merſons* youth ſcorning and ſpurning at his wife *La Vaſſelay's* age, and wholly addicting himſelfe to others; and her age growen infinitely iealous of his youth: ſo that for any thing I ſee or know to the contrary, theſe different vices haue already taken ſuch deepe and dangerous root in them, as they threaten not only the ſhipwracke of their content, but of their fortunes, if not of their liues.

Now for vs to find out the particular obiect of *La Vaſſelayes* ielouſie, as her fooliſh curioſitie hath already the generall cauſe: we muſt know, that ſhe hath a very proper young *Gentlewoman* who attends her, of ſome eighteen yeares of age, tearmed *Gratiana*, of a middle ſtature, ſomewhat enclining to fatneſſe, hauing a freſh ſanguine complexion, and bright flaxen haire, ſhe being indeed euery way exceeding louely and

and faire; and with this *Gratiana*, ſhe feares her *Huſband* is more familiar then either modeſty or chaſtity can permit; and yet ſhee hath onely two poore reaſons for this, her credulity & ielouſie, and *God* knowes they are poore and weake ones indeed: The firſt is, that ſhee thinks her owne withered face ſerues onely but as a foyle, to make *Gratiana's* freſh beautie ſeeme the more precious and amiable in his eyes. The ſecond is, that ſhe once ſaw him kiſſe her in her preſence in the garden, when ſhe brought him a handkercher, which his Page had forgotten to giue him. Ridiculous grounds, and triuiall reaſons, for her to build her feare, or erect her ielouſie on, or to inuent and rayſe ſo foule a ſcandall and callumny: and yet not to ſuppreſſe, but to report the whole truth, *De Merſon* was laſciuiouſly in loue with *Gratiana*, had often attempted her deflouration, but could neuer obtain her conſent thereunto: for ſhe was as chaſte as faire, and impregnable, either to bee ſeduced by his gifts and preſents, or to be vanquiſhed and wonne by his treacherous promiſes, proteſtations, and oáthes: for ſhe told him plainly and peremptorily, when ſhe ſaw him begin to grow importunate, and impudent in this his folly, That although ſhee were but a poore *Gentlemans* daughter, yet ſhee thanked *God*, that her parents had ſo vertuouſly train'd her vp in the Schoole of *Honour*, that ſhe would rather dye, then liue to be a ſtrumpet to any Gentleman or Prince of the world: which chaſte anſwere, and generous reſolution of hers, did then ſo quench the flames of his laſciuious and inordinate affection to her, as thencefoorth hee exchanged his luſt into loue towards her, and vowed, that he would both reſpect & honour her as his ſiſter.

Now although they both kept the paſſage of this buſineſſe ſecret from his wife her Miſtris; yet notwithſtanding, as it is the nature of Ielouſie, not to hearken to any reaſon, nor approue of any beliefe but of her owne: therefore ſhee is confident, that he lyes with *Gratiana* more oftner then with her ſelfe; which ſhe vowes ſhe cannot digeſt, and will no longer tolerate. To which end, (with a moſt malicious, and ſtrange kind of treachery) ſhe makes faire weather with *Gratiana*; and (thinking to coole her hote courage, and to allay the heat of her luxurious blood) looking one day ſtedfaſtly in her face, ſhe tells her that ſhee hath need to be let blood, to preuent a Feuer: whereunto, although chaſte and innocent *Gratiana* was neuer formerly let blood, ſhe notwithſtanding willingly conſents thereunto; which to effect, *La Vaßelay* (like a baſe miſtris, and a treacherous ſtepdame) ſends for an *Apothecary*, named *Rennee*, giues him a watch-word in his eare, to draw at leaſt ſixteene ounces of blood from *Gratiana*, for that ſhe was ſtrongly entred into a burning Feuer: But he being as honeſt, as ſhee was treacherous and cruell, told her, that the drawing of ſo great a quantitie of blood from her, might not only impaire her health, but indanger her life. But ſhe replies, it was ſo ordered by a *Doctor*: whereupon he opens her right arme veyne; and as he had neere drawen ſo much from this poore harmeleſſe young *Gentlewoman*, ſhee faints twice in a chayre betwixt their armes, and all the cold water they threw in her face, could very hardly refetch her, and keepe life in her: this old hard-hearted hagge, ſtill notwithſtanding crying out, that it was not blood enough; hauing no other reaſon for this her treachery and cruel-

tie,

tie, but that indeed ſhe thought it not enough, or ſufficient to quench the vnquenchable thirſt and flame of her ielouſie: of which this is the firſt effect towards this innocent young Gentlewoman, but we ſhall not goe farre to ſee a ſecond.

Gratiana is ſo farre from dreaming of her miſtris ielouſie towards her maſter, and her ſelfe; or from once thinking of this her trecherous letting her blood, as ſhe thanks her, for her affection and care of her health: and now the very next day after *De Merſon* dying at home with his old wife, (which he had not done in many dayes before) and ſeeing *Gratiana* looke ſo white and pale, demaunds her if ſhe bee not well, and then queſtioneth his wife what ayles her Gentlewoman to looke ſo ill, which ſhe ſeemes to put off with a feigned excuſe: but withall (as if this care of her husband towards *Gratiana*, were a true conformation of their diſhoneſty, and her ielouſie) ſhe retaynes the memory thereof deepely in her heart and thoughts: yea, it is ſo frequent, and fixed in her imaginations, as ſhe cannot, ſhe will not any longer ſuffer or indure this affection of her husband to *Gratiana*; nor that *Gratiana's* youth ſhal wrong *La Vaſſelay's* age in the rites and duties of marriage. Wherfore caſting ſad aſpects on him, and malignant lookes on her, ſhe to pleaſe, and giue ſatisfaction to her ielouſie (which cannot be pleaſed or ſatisfied with any thing but reuenge) reſolues to make her know what it is, for a wayting maid to offend and wrong her miſtris in this kind: when not to deminiſh, but rather to augment and redouble her former cruelty towards her. Her husband riding one day abroad in company of diuers other *Gentlemen* of the Citie, to hunt Wolues which abound

abound in thoſe vaſt and ſpacious woods of *Mayne*: ſhe vnder pretence of ſome other buſineſſe, calls *Gratiana* alone into her inner chamber, when bolting the doore after her, ſhe with meager and pale enuy in her lookes, and implackable fury and choller in her ſpeeches, chargeth her of diſhoneſty with her husband; calling her whore, ſtrumpet, and baggage: affirming that the time and houre is now come for her to be reuenged of her. Poore *Gratiana* both amazed and affrighted at this ſudden & furious (both vnexpected & vndefiled allarum of her *Miſtris*, ſeeing her honor, & (as ſhe thinks & fears) her life called in queſtion; ſhe after a world of ſighs and teares, tearmes her accuſers deuils and witches, vowes by her part of heauen, and vpon the perill of her owne ſoule, that ſhe is innocent of that crime whereof ſhe accuſed her, and that neither in deed or thought, ſhe was euer diſhoneſt, or vnchaſt with any man of the world, much leſſe with her Maſter: But this will not ſatisfie incenſed *La Vaſſelay*, neither are theſe ſpeeches or teares of *Gratiana* of power to paſſe current with her ielouſie; but reputing them falſe and counterfeit, ſhe calles in her chamber mayd, and Cooke-mayd, whom ſhe had purpoſely led there, and bids them vnſtrippe *Gratiana* naked to her waſt, and to bind her hand and foot to the bedde poſt; which with much repyning and pitie, they are at laſt inforced to doe. When commaunding them forth the chamber, and bolting the doore after them, ſhe not like a woman, but rather as a fury of hell, flies to poore innocent *Gratiana*, and with a great burchen rod, doth not only raze but crucifie her armes, backe and ſhoulders: when harmleſſe ſoule, ſhe (though in vayne) hauing no other defenſiue weapons but her tongue,

tongue, and her innocency, cries aloud to heauen and earth for ſuccour. But this old hagge as full of malice as Ielouſie, hath no compaſſion of her cries, nor pitty of her ſighes: yea, neither the ſight of her teares, or blood, (which trickling downe her cheekes and ſhoulders, doe both bedew, and ingrayne her ſmocke) are of power to appeaſe her fury and enuy, vntill hauing ſpent three rods, and tyred and wearied both her armes, ſhe in the heat of her choller, and the height of her reuenge; deliuers her theſe bitter and ſcoffing words. *Mynion, this, this is the way, yea the onely way to coole the heate of thy courage, and to quench the fire of thy luſt*; When calling in her two mayds, ſhe commaunds them to vnbind *Gratiana*, and to helpe on her clothes. When triumphing in her cruelty, ſhe furiouſly departs and leaues them; who cannot refrayne from teares, to ſee how ſeuerely and cruelly their *Miſtris* hath handled this her poore *Gentlewoman*.

Gratiana the better to remedy theſe her inſupportable and cruell wrongs, holds it diſcretion to deſemble them, and ſo prouiding her ſelfe ſecretly of a horſe and man, ſhe the next night ſteales away; rides to *La Ferte*, and from thence to her father at *Nogent le Retron*, where he was ſuperintendant of the *Prince of Condes* houſe and Caſtle in that Town; & where the *Princeſſe Dowager* his mother built vp the greateſt part of her ſorrowfull reſidence, whiles he was detayned priſoner in the Caſtle of *Boys de Vincennes* neere *Paris*: *La Vaſſelay* grieues at this her ſudden, and vnexpected departure, the which ſhe feares her husband *De Merſon*, and her Father *Monſieur De Bremay* will take in ill part; wherein ſhe is no way deceiued, for the one grieues, and the other ſtormes thereat: yea,

when *De Merſon* (through flattery and threats) had drawen from the Chamber-mayd and Cooke-maid, the truth of his wiues cruell whipping of *Gratiana*, as alſo the cauſe thereof, her ielouſie: He iuſtly incenſed and inraged, flies to this his ſottiſh and cruell wife, tells her, that ielouſie comes from the diuell, whoſe part he affirms ſhe hath acted, in acting this her cruelty vpon innocent *Gratiana*, then whom there liues not a chaſter maid in the world, That although ſhe were poore, yet, that ſhe was aſwell deſcended as her ſelfe. In which regard, if ſhe did not ſpeedily right and redeeme her wrongs, and ſeeke meanes to pacifie and recall her, that he would foorthwith leaue her, yea, and vtterly forſake her. Which cooling card of his to his wife, makes her looke on her former erronius cruelty towards *Gratiana*, rather with outward griefe, then inward repentance. But ſeeing that her ielouſie muſt now ſtoope and ſtrike ſayle, to her huſbands *Choller*, and that to enioy his company, ſhe muſt not be exempted and depriued of hers: ſhe contrary to her deſires and will, (which ſtill retaines the fumes and flames of ielouſie, as that doth of reuenge) is inforced to make a vertue of neceſſity, and ſo to beare vp with the time, feigning her ſelfe repentant and ſorrowfull for what ſhee had formerly done to *Gratiana*: ſhee to reclayme her, buyes her ſo much wrought blacke Taffety for a Gowne, and ſo much Crimſon Damaske for a Petticote, and with a bracelet of pearle which ſhe accuſtomed to weare vpon her right arme; ſhe ſends it to *Nogent* to her by *La Vileſte*, a *Gentleman* of her husbands, and accompanieth it with a letter to her father, *Monſieur de Bremay*, which contained theſe words.

Hauing

Hauing vindicated Truth *from* Error, *and metamorphoſed* Ielouſie *into* Iudgement, *I find that I haue wronged thy daughter* Gratiana, *whereat I grieue, with contrition, and ſorrow with repentance, ſith my huſbands vowes and oathes haue fully cleared her* Honour *and* Chaſtity, *which my fooliſh incredulity and feare, raſhly attempted, both to eclips and diſparage: In which regard, praying her to forgiue, and thy ſelfe to forget that wrong; I earneſtly deſire her ſpeedie returne by this bearer, and yee both ſhall ſee, that I neuer formerly hated her ſo much, as hencefoorth I will both loue and honour her: I haue now ſent her ſome ſmall tokens of my affection; and ere long ſhe ſhall find greater effects and teſtimonies thereof; for knowing her to be as chaſt as fayre; In this* De Bremay *I requeſt thee to reſt confident, that as ſhe is now thy daughter by* Nature, *ſo ſhe ſhall be hencefoorth mine by adoption.*

LA VASSELAY.

De Bremay hauing receiued this letter, and his daughter *Gratiana* theſe kind tokens from her *Miſtris La Vaſſelay*: his choller, and her griefe and ſorrow is ſoone defaced and blowen away: ſo he well ſatisfied, and ſhe contented and pleaſed, he ſends her back from *Nogent* to *Mans* by *La Villette*, by whom hee writes this enſuing letter to his *Miſtris La Vaſſelay* in anſwere of hers.

THy Letter hath giuen me ſo much content and ſatisfaction, as thy vndeſerued cruelty to my daughter Gratiana *did griefe, and indignation. And had ſhe beene guilty of that crime, whereof thy feare made thee iealous, I would for euer haue renounced her for my daughter, and*

depriued her of my sight: for as her Vertues *are her best wealth, and her* Honour *her chiefest reuenew: so if shee had fayled in these, or faltered in this, I should then haue ioyned with thee to hate her, as I doe now to loue her: But her* Teares *and* Oathes *haue cleered her innocency, and in hers, thy husbands. In which regard, relying vpon her owne merits, and thy professed kindnesse; she forgetting, and I forgiuing things past, I now returne her thee by thy seruant* La Villette; *hoping that if thou wilt not affect her as thy adopted* Daughter, *yet that thou wilt tender her as thy obedient and obseruant handmaid.*

DE BREMAY.

Gratiana's hopes, and her fathers credulity of *La Vaßelay's* future affection towards her, as also her gifts and promises, so far preuayle with them, as she is now returned to her, from *Nogent* to *Mans*; But I feare she had done farre better to haue still remained with her father; for she might consider, and he know, what little safety, and apparant danger, there is to relie vpon the fauour of an incensed iealousie: *La Vaßelay* (in all outward shew) receiues and welcomes *Gratiana* with many expressions of loue, and demonstrations of ioy, thereby to please her husband; who indeed likes so well of her returne, as he likes his wife the better for procuring it. And now to the eye of the world, and according to humane conceit and sense, all three parties are reconciled and satisfied, as if *La Vaßelay's* iealousie had neuer heretofore offended her husband, nor her cruelty wronged *Gratiana:* or as if he had neuer knowne the one, nor she felt the other. But we shall not goe farre to see this calme oretaken with a tempest, and this Sunne-shine surprised

prised with a dismall and disasterous showre.

For three moneths were not fully expired, since *Gratiana's* returne to *Mans*, but *La Vasselay's* old iealousie of her, and her husband *De Merson*, which seemed to bee suppressed and extinguished, doth now flash and flame foorth anew with more violence and impetuositie; yea, hee cannot looke on *Gratiana*, much lesse speake to her, but presently this old iealous Beldame in her heart and thoughts, proclaimes them guiltie of Adultery: whereat shee indiscreetly suffers her selfe to be so farre transported with *Indignation* and *Enuy*, as she vowes she will no longer tolerate or digest it. And now it is, that like a fury of hell she first assumes damnable and execrable resolutions, not onely against the Innocency, but against the life of innocent and harmlesse *Gratiana*; who poore soule is the nearer her danger, in respect she holds her selfe fartheſt from it: yea, this iealous old Hagg, this Fury, nay, this she-Deuill *La Vasselay*, hath not only consulted, but determined and concluded with her bloody thoughts, that she will speedily send *Gratiana* into another world; becausse her youth shall no longer abuse and wrong her age in this. When forgetting her selfe, her soule, and her God, thereby purposely to please her senses, her Iclousie, and her Tutor the Deuill, she vowes, that no respect of reason or Religion, no consideration of Heauen or Hell, shall be capable to diuert her from dispatching her: yea, and as if she not onely reioyced, but gloried in this her pernitious and bloody designe, she thinkes euery houre a yeare before shee hath perform'd it: To which end, prouiding her selfe of strong poyson, and watching, and catching at the very first opportunitie, as soone as e-

uer *Gratiana* found her ſelfe not well, ſhe vnder a colour of much affection and care to her, makes her ſome White broath, wherein infuſing and intermixing the aforeſaid poyſon, ſhe (graceleſſely and cruelly) giues it her, the which within ſixe dayes fainting and languiſhing, makes a perpetuall diuorce and ſeparation betwixt her ſoule and her body, leauing this to deſcend to earth, and that to aſcend to heauen, to draw downe vengeance on this helliſh and execrable *La Vaſſelay*, for ſo inhumanly and cruelly murthering this her harmeleſſe and innocent wayting Gentlewoman *Gratiana*.

De Merſon vnderſtanding of *Gratiana's* death, almoſt as ſoone as of her ſickneſſe, he very ſorrowfully bites the lip therat: for conſidering this accident in its true nature, his thoughts ſuggeſt him, & his heart and ſoule prompts him, that his wife *La Vaſſelay* had vndoubtedly occaſioned her death, & ſo metamorphoſed her ielouſie into murther; yea, & notwithſtanding the faire and ſorrowfull ſhew which ſhe puts thereon to the contrary, yet the premiſes conſidered, he is very confident in this his beliefe and feare: when grieuing at the crueltie of this diſaſter, and abhorring the authour of ſo monſtrous and bloody a fact; the very ſight of this his old wretched wife is odious, and the remembrance of this her cruell crime, deteſtable and execrable vnto him. Againe, when he conſidereth *Gratiana's* beautie and chaſtitie, and that ſhe was ſent to her vntimely graue for his ſake, this doth not onely redouble his ſorrowes, but infinitely augment and increaſe his afflictions: ſo that beginning to feare his wiues enuy, as much as he hated her iealouſie, in that it was not onely poſſible, but likely, that it might alſo futurely

futurely extend, and reflect on him, as well as it already had on harmeleſſe and innocent *Gratiana*, hee aſſumes a reſolution to leaue and forſake her, the which wee ſhall ſhortly ſee him put in execution; when the better to curbe and vexe her, he ſecretly packes vp all her Bills, Bonds, Leaſes, and Conueyances, as alſo all her Money, Plate, Iewels, and richeſt Houſholdſtuffe; and ſo giuing out a prohibition to all the Tennants, not to dare to pay her any rent, he allowing her only a bare maintenance, very ſuddenly (when ſhee leaſt expected or dreamt thereof) takes horſe, and rides home to his fathers, where hee reſolues to make the greateſt part of his reſidence; and all the teares and prayers of his wife, are not of power to reclaime or retaine him.

La Vaſſelay ſeeing the vnkindneſſe of her Husband *De Merſon*, in making her a widdow, almoſt as ſoone as a wife; as alſo his ingratitude, in depriuing her of the vſe and fruition of her owne eſtate & meanes, and leauing her ſo poore an allowance, as could ſcarſe warrant her a competent maintenance, ſhee is almoſt ready to die for meere griefe and ſorrow thereof, but how to remedy it, ſhe knowes not: And now ſhe repents her folly and indiſcretion, in matching her aged ſelfe to ſo young a man as *De Merſon*: now ſhe doth not onely accuſe, but condemne her owne iealouſie, which drew her to this foule fact of murthering her harmeleſſe, and as ſhe now beleeues, her innocent Wayting-maid *Gratiana*; for the which, this ingratefull departure, and hard vſage of her husband, is but the leaſt, and as ſhe tearmes it, but the fore-runner of greater puniſhments, which *God* hath ordained and reſerued for her: yea, it is not onely a griefe to her

her thoughts, but a vexation to her heart and soule, to see her selfe made the mocking stocke and laughter of all *Mans*, and *Maine*, who rather excuse her husbands youth, then any way pitie or commiserate her age; and to see that the friends of her prosperitie turne their backs and faces to her, in her affliction and pouertie: and if shee haue any hope yet left, to assist and comfort her in these her calamities, it is by endeauoring to reconcile and reclaime her husband to her by Letters: when taking pen and paper, shee within a moneth of his departure, sends him these few lines:

SInce at thy request I both recanted my Ielousie *to thy selfe, and repented my* crueltie *to my mayd* Gratiana, *what haue I commited or done, that should deserue this thy ingratefull, and as I may truely say, Heart-killing departure? for hauing made a most exact* Scruteny *in my thoughts and soule; either of them informe me, and both assure mee, that the freenesse and feruency of my affection towards thee, deserued not so cruell, but a farre more courteous requitall. If my Age bee any way displeasing to thy youth, yet depriue me not of the felicitie of thy sight and presence, wherein I not onely delight, but glory. And although I can bee content that thou surfet with my wealth, yet make mee not so miserable, as to starue both in and for thy presence. If any haue giuen thee any sinister or false impressions, either of my selfe or actions; why if thy affection to mee will not deface them, at least let thy pitie: Yea, returne my sweet and deare* Husband, *and what errors or faults soeuer thou sayest I haue committed, I will not onely redeeme them with kisses, but with teares.*

LA VASSELAY.

De

De Merson hauing receiued this his wiues Letter, it works such poore effects in his affection, as he doth rather reioyce then commisserate her estate and sorrowes; yea, he so slights her and her remembrance, as once hee had thought to haue answered her letter with silence; but at last he (some eight dayes after) returnes her this answer:

What hope can I haue of thy Affection, *when I see thou art inuiolably constant to thy* Ielousie; *and if the* Scrutiny *of thy thoughts and soule bee as true as thou pretendest, yet I feare that this Ielousie of thine, is not the greatest, but the least of thy crimes. Thou writest me, that I giue a cruell requitall to thy affection, but pray* God, *thou haue not giuen a more sharpe and inhumane one to* Gratiana's *seruice and* Chastitie: *Neither is it thy* Age, *but thy* Imperfections *and* Vices, *which are both displeasing and odious to my youth: for I could brook that with as much patience, as I can digest these with impossibilities. If thou want meanes, I will grant thee more; but for my presence, I haue many reasons to deny thee. I know none but thy selfe, which hath giuen me any impressions of thy actions; and if those were false, they would proue thy true happines, as now they doe thy misery, which my affection doth pitie, though cannot redresse. It is but in vaine for thee, either to expect or hope for my returne; and sith thy faults and errors are best knowen to thy selfe, let thy repentance redeeme them towards* God: *for neither thy kisses nor teares, can or shall to me.*

DE MERSON.

This Letter of *De Merson* to his wife *La Vasseday*, is so farre from comforting, as it doth most extreamely

afflict her: And although his diſcontents be ſuch, as ſhe ſees it almoſt impoſſible to reconcile and reclaime him: yet being exceedingly perplexed, and grieued with this her ſolitary and diſcontented life, ſhee yet hopes that a ſecond Letter may obtaine that of him, which her firſt could not: when ſixe moneths time being now ſlipt away ſince his departure, ſhee faigning her ſelfe ſicke, writes vnto him againe to this effect:

THy abſence hath ſo depriued my ioyes, and engendred my ſorrowes, that Sickneſſe threatens my life to bee neere her period: So among a world of diſcontents, let mee yet beare this one Content to my graue, that I may once more ſee thee, whom ſo tenderly I both deſire, and long to ſee: and if I cannot bee ſo happie as to liue, at the leaſt make mee ſo fortunate, as to dye in thine Armes: which I knowe not whether it be a greater Charitie for thee to graunt, or a Crueltie to denie mee this requeſt of mine: For my Deare De Merſon, *if thou wilt not bee pleaſed to bee my Husband, yet bee not offended to remember that I am thy Wife; and withall, that as I deſire thy returne, ſo that I haue not deſerued thy departure: But if thou wilt ſtill bee inexorable to my requeſts, theſe Lines of mine, which I write thee rather with Teares then Inke, ſhall beare witneſſe betwixt thy ſelfe and mee, of my Kindneſſe, of thy Crueltie, and how my Life ſought thy Affection, though my Death could neither finde, nor obtaine it.*

LA VASSELAY.

De

De Merſon reades this Letter with laughter; yea, hee is ſo inſenſible of her Lines, Requeſts, and Teares, as if another had ſent him newes of her Death, as ſhee her ſelfe did of her Sickneſſe, it had beene farre more pleaſing, and better welcome to him. But thinking how to gall her to the quicke, to the end hee might henceforth ſaue her the labour to write him any more Letters, and himſelfe to receiue and peruſe them, hee returnes her this ſharpe and bitter anſwer:

IT is thy Errours, not my Abſence, which hath exchanged thy Ioyes into Sorrowes; and if thy life draw neere her period, they cannot bee farre from theirs. My ſight is a poore content for thee to beare to thy graue, ſith as a Chriſtian, *thou ſhouldeſt delight to ſee none but thy* Sauiour, *nor bee Ambitious to liue in any armes but his: and if thou hold not this to be Charitie, I know others cannot repute it Crueltie. That I am thy* Huſband *I graunt, and that thou art my* Wife, *I not denie: But yet I feare thy heart knowes, though thy Pen affirme the contrary, that I haue farre more reaſon for my departure, then thou to deſire my returne. And if thou wilt yet knowe more, if the Inke wherewith thou writeſt thy Letter bee Teares, pray* GOD *thou diddeſt not bedeawe* Gratiana's *Winding-ſheete and Coffin, both with her Teares, and Blood: for haddeſt thou not beene cruell, yea, inhumane to her, I would neuer haue beene vnkinde to thee: And to conclude, liue as happy, as I feare her death will make thee dye miſerable:*

DE MERSON.

The receit and perusall of this Letter, doth not only grieue but afflict and torment *La Vasselay*: for the very remembrance of *De Merson* his suspition and apprehension, that she had a hand in the death of *Gratians*, doth as it were pierce her heart, as well with feare as sorrow: for as her pouertie lay before at his mercy, so now she knowes doth her life; and that sith he will not loue her, hee may chance so maligne and hate her, as to reueale it. Whereupon to secure her feare, and to warrant the safetie of her life, she soone exchangeth her loue into hatred, and her affection and ielousie, into enuy towards him; yea, her inraged and incensed thoughts, engender and imprint such bloody designes of reuenge in her heart, as abandoning the feare and grace of *God*, she impiously concludes a match with the Deuill, to dispatch and murther him; and from which bloody and damnable designe, no regard of *God*, or her *Soule*, nor respect of *Heauen* or *Hell*, can or shall diuert her: when ouerpassing a small parcell of time, wherein she ruminated and pondered, how shee should send him from this life to another: at last her malicious curiositie makes her thoughts fall on *La Villette*, being his Gentleman, who still followed him, as holding him a fit Agent to attempt, and instrument to finish this bloody busines, which so much imported her content and safetie; grounding her reasons vpon the greatnes of his heart and mind, and the weaknesse of his purse & meanes; as if pouertie were a sufficient cause and priuiledge to commit so treacherous and bloody a fact: When knowing him to bee then in *Mans*, receiuing vp his Masters Rents, she sends for him; to whom (the dore bolted) she tells him she is to request his secrecy in a

businesse

buſineſſe which infinitely tends to his good. He promiſeth it her: but ſhe will haue him ſweare thereunto, which he doth: when with ſighs and teares, making a bitter inuectiue, and recapitulation of her Huſband, his maſters vndeſerued indignitie and crueltie towards her; ſhe then and there makes a propoſition to him, to murther him for her, and that ſhe will giue him a thouſand crownes to effect it. *La Villette* ſeeing the greatneſſe of the danger, in that of the crime, ſeemes not onely diſcontented, but amazed hereat: for although he loue gold well, yet hee will not purchaſe it at ſo deare a rate, and baſe and damnable a price, as that of his maſters blood: when ſeeing ſhee could not preuaile, ſhe againe puts him in mind of his oath to ſecrecy; which he againe vowes neuer to infringe or violate: and withall, like a good *Seruant*, ſeekes to diſſwade and diuert her from ſuch bloody thoughts and attempts. Had *La Villette* remained in the puritie and candeur of this his Religious and Chriſtian Reſolution, not to imbrue or diſtaine his hands in the innocent blood of his Maſter, it would haue made him as happy, as wee ſhall ſhortly ſee him miſerable, in attempting and executing the contrary: for as a propenſion and reſolution to *Vertue*, breedes not onely *Honour*, but ſafetie; ſo the contrary effects thereof, produce not onely ſhame, but miſery. To foreſee ſinne, is a pious wiſdome; but to preuent and eſchew it, is alwayes a moſt wiſe and bleſſed pietie.

And whereas *Time* ſhould rather decreaſe then encreaſe; and rather root out, then plant *Malice* in our thoughts, and *Enuy* in our Reſolutions; yet directly contrary, that of *La Vaſſelay* to her husband *De Merſon*, doth not dye, but liue, will not fade but flouriſh:

for a moneth or two more being runne out, and expired, and *La Vilette* againe in *Mans*, her malice to her husband is ſo inueterate and implacable, as ſhe againe ſends for him to her houſe, where (in great ſecreſie and intended affection) ſhee tels him, that if he will murther his maſter, ſhe within ſixe moneths will marry him in requitall, and not onely liue his faithfull wife, but die his obedient and conſtant handmaid. Now although her firſt proffer of a thouſand crowns could not procure of *La Villette*, theſe her ſugred ſpeeches, which ſhe intermixeth with kiſſes, and the conſideration of ſo many thouſands, which her eſtate not onely promiſeth, but aſſureth, doth; ſo as forgetting his former vertue, to remember his future vice, he (like a damnable villaine) ſweares to her to effect it: which wretched Verball contract, they interchangeably ſeale with oathes and kiſſes, which (if they had had any feare of God, or care of their ſaluations) they ſhould haue deteſted with horror, and abhorred with deteſtation: neither will his malice (or the Deuill the Author thereof) giue him leaue to protract or defer it: for hauing reſolued to murther him as he rides abroad; his maſter on a time being inuited to a generall hunting, by the *Baron* of Saint *Suſanna* (ſonne and heire to *Monſieur de Varennes*) at his ſaid Towne of *Suſanna*, as he came riding homewards towards his Fathers houſe of *Manfrelle*, he in the midſt of a great wood, neere vnto the ſmall village of Saint *Georges*, riding behind his maſter, diſchargeth his Piſtoll, loaden with a brace of bullets thorow his reynes, which makes him inſtantly fall off dead from his horſe to the ground. When this helliſh ſeruant *La Villette*, ſeeing his maſter deuoyd of breath, and groueling

groueling and weltring in his blood, he hauing acted the part of a ſinnefull Deuill, in committing this cruell murther, now reſolues to aſſume, and repreſent that of a ſubtill Hypocrite in concealing it: when determining to report that they were both aſſaulted, and his maſter ſlaine by theeues; he to make all his actions conduce and looke that way, chargeth his Piſtoll againe with another brace of bullets, and ſhoots thorow his owne hat, giues himſelfe a cut ore his left hand, and then breakes his Rapier, takes his owne Piſtoll, and his Maſters Rapier, and throwes it into a Pond cloſe adioyning; takes likewiſe his maſters purſe and watch foorth his pocket, and hides it ſecretly: and then the more cunningly and knauiſhly to bleare and deceiue the eyes of the world, thereby to make this his Hypocriſie paſſe the currenter, he hauing purpoſely prouided himſele of two ſmall cords; with the one he binds both his owne feet, and with the other (by a pritty ſleight) ſlips therein his armes behind his backe, and then ſetting himſelfe againſt a tree, he very pittifully weepes, groanes, and cries out vpon the theeues and murtherers of his Maſter *De Merſon*: when three *Gentlemen* of Brittaine, trauelling that way towards *Paris*, repaire to his aſſiſtance, whom they find out by his cries: to whom he relates that fiue theeues had aſſaulted his Maſter and himſelfe, that hee fought in the defence as long as his ſword held; that his maſter was kild with a Piſtoll, then rob'd, and himſelfe ſhot thorow, and wounded, and bound as they ſaw. When theſe three *Britiſh Gentlemen*, grieuing at this mournefull accident, and bloody ſpectacle, they inſtantly cut the cords wherewith he was bound, and ſo hauing conueyed the dead

corps

corps to the next Cottage, they runne vp and downe the wood to find out theſe theeues and murtherers, but in vaine: ſo *La Villette* hauing thanked theſe Gentlemen for their affection and charity towards his dead maſter, and liuing ſelfe: He with a wonderfull exteriour ſhew of ſorrow, takes care for the ſpeedy and decent tranſporting home of his breathleſſe Maſter to *Manfrelle:* where his mournfull Father receiues, and buries him with infinite griefe, lamentation, and teares.

In the meane time, this murtherous *La Villette* giues priuate intelligence therof to the bloody *La Vaßelay*, who although ſhe inwardly receiue this newes with extreme content & ioy, to ſee her ſelfe freed of ſo vnkind and ingratefull a husband; yet publiquely to the eye of the world (thereby the better to delude and deceiue the world, ſhe contrariwiſe takes on blackes, ſeeming to be exceedingly mournefull, penſiue, and ſorrowfull thereat: but *God* will ſhortly diſcouer the falſhood of theſe her teares; and in the triumphs of his reuenge, pull off the maske of this her deſembling and treacherous *Hypocriſie:* For as *Mans, Lauall, Angiers*, and all the adiacent Townes and Countrey, grieues at this lamentable murther of *De Merſon:* ſo they as much admire and wonder to ſee his old widdow *La Vaßelay* ſo ſhortly married & eſpouſed to his *Gentleman La Villette*, whoſe Nuptials are celebrated and conſummated farre within the tearme of ſixe moneths after. For the curious wits of theſe Cities & countreys, conſidering what a prepoſterous courſe and reſolution this was for her to mary her husbands man, and withall, ſo ſoone; as alſo that there was none other preſent but himſelfe, when his Maſter *De Merſon*

Merson was murthered, it is vmbragious; and leaues a spice of feare, and sting of suspition in their heads; that there was more in the wind then was yet knowne, and therfore knowing no more, they deferre the detection thereof, to the prouidence and pleasure of *God*, who best, yea, who onely knowes in *Heauen*, how to conduct and mannage the actions here below on *Earth*: and now indeed the very time is come, that the Lord will no longer permit these their cruell and bloody murthers to be concealed, but will bring them foorth to receiue condigne punishment: and for want of other euidence, and witnesses, they themselues shall be witnesses against themselues. And although *La Vasselay's* poysoning of *Gratiana*, and *La Villette* pistolling of his master *De Merson*, were cunningly contriued, and secretly perpetrated; yet wee shall see the last of these bloody murthers occasion the discouery and detection of the first, and both of them most seuerely and sharply punished for these their bloody crimes and horrible offences. *The manner is thus.*

These two execrable wretches, *La Villette*, and *La Vasselay* haue not liued married aboue some seuen or eight monethes, but he being deepely in Lawe with *Monsieur De Manfrelle*, his *Predecessors* father, for the detention of some lands and writings, hee takes an occasion to ride home to his house of *Manfrelle* to him, to conferre of the differences, and by the way falls into the company of some *Marchants* of *Lauall*, & *Vitstry*, who were returning from the Faire of *Chartres*: when ryding together for the space of almost a whole dayes iourney, the secret prouidence, & sacred pleasure of God had so ordayned, that *La Villettes*

horſe who bore him quietly and ſafely before; on a Sunday, firſt goes back-wards in deſpight of his ſpur or ſwich, and then ſtanding an end on his two hind legges, falles quite backe with him, and almoſt breakes the bulke and truncke of his body: when hauing hardly the power to ſpeake, his breath fayling him, and he ſeeing no way but death for him, and the hideous image thereof apparantly before his eyes, the Spirit of *God* doth ſo operate with his ſinnefull ſoule, as he there confeſſeth how his wicked wife *La Vaſſelay* had cauſed him to murther his maſter *De Merſon*, whom he ſhot to death with his Piſtoll; that ſhe firſt ſeduced him with a thouſand Crownes to performe it, which he refuſed; but then her conſent to marry him, made him not onely attempt, but finiſh that bloody buſineſſe, whereof now from his very heart and ſoule he repented himſelfe, and beſeeched the Lord to forgiue it him.

But heere before the *Readers* curioſitie carry him further, let me in the name and feare of God, both requeſt and coniure him, to ſtand amazed, and wonder with me, at his ſacred prouidence, and inſcrutable wiſedome and iudgement, which moſt miraculouſly concurres and ſhines in this accedent, and eſpecially in three eſſentiall and moſt apparent circumſtances thereof: For it was on the very ſame horſe, the ſame day twelue month, & in the very ſame wood, & place, where this execrable wretch *La Villette* formerly murthered his maſter *De Merſon*: Famous, and notorious circumſtances, which deſerue to be obſerued, and remarked of all the children of God, yea, & to be imprinted and ingrauen in their hearts and memories, thereby to deter vs from the like crimes of murther.

Now

Now theſe honeſt Merchants of *Lanall*, and *Vittry* (as much in charity to *La Villettes* life, as in execration of that confeſſed murther of his Maſter *De Merſon*) conuey him to an Inne in Saint *Georges*, when expecting euery minute, that he would dye in their hands, they ſend away poaſt to aduertiſe the *Preſidiall Court* of *Mans* heereof, (within whoſe Iuriſdiction Saint *Georges* was) who ſpeedily command *La Villette* to be brought thither to them aliue or dead: But *God* reſerued him from that naturall, to a more infamous death, and made him liue till he came thither; where againe he confeſſeth this his foule murther of his maſter *De Merſon*, and likewiſe accuſeth *La Vaſſelay* to be the ſole inſtigator thereof, as wee haue formerly heard and vnderſtood. Whereupon hee is no ſooner examined, but this bloody old Hagge is likewiſe impriſoned: who with many aſſeuerations and teares, denies, and retorts this foule crime from her ſelfe to him. But her Iudges are too wiſe to beleeue the weakneſſe and inualiditie of this her fooliſh iuſtification: So whiles they are conſulting on her, *De Bremay* hauing notice of all theſe accidents, but eſpecially of *La Vaſſelay's* impriſonment; he (ſtil apprehending and fearing, that ſhee vndoubtedly was the death of his daughter *Gratiana*) takes Poaſt from *Nogent*, to *Mans*, where he accuſeth her thereof to the *Crymineli Iudges* of that *Preſidiall Court*: who vpon theſe her double accuſations, adiudge her to the Racke, when at the very firſt torment thereof, ſhe at laſt (preferring the life of her ſoule, before that of her body) confeſſeth her ſelfe to be the Actor of her firſt crime of *Murther*, and the *Authour* of the ſecond: when, and whereupon the *Iudges* (reſembling themſelues)

in deteſtation, and for expiation of theſe her foule crimes, condemne him to be hangd, and ſhee to bee burnt aliue; which the next day, at the common place of execution (neere the *Halles*) in *Mans*, is accordingly executed, in the preſence, and to the content of a world of people of that citie, who as much abhorre the enormitie of theſe their bloody crimes, as they reioyce and glorifie God, for this their (not ſo ſeuere, as deſerued) puniſhments.

As for *La Villette* hee (like an impious *Chriſtian*) ſaid little elſe, but that which he had formerly ſpoken and deliuered in the wood, at the receiuing of his fall; onely he ſaid, That he had well hoped, that his great wealth which hee had with *La Vaſſelay*, would haue ſheltred and preſerued him from this infamous death for murthering her Husband, and his Maſter, *De Merſon*.

But as for this bloody Beldame, and wretched old Fury, *La Vaſſelay*, ſhe was content to grieue at *Gratiana's* death, though not to lament or pitie that of her Husband *De Merſons*: yea, and although ſhe ſeemed to blame her Ielouſie towards her; yet her age was ſo wretchedly inſtructed in pietie, as ſhe could not find in her heart, either to make an *Apologie*, or any way to ſeeme repentant for her inhumane crueltie towards him: For as ſhe demanded pardon of *De Bretmay* for poyſoning his daughter; ſo ſhe ſpake not a word tending that way, to *Manfrelle*, for cauſing his ſonne to be piſtoll'd; only in particular tearmes, ſhe requeſted *God* to forgiue the vanitie of her youth; and in generall ones, the world to forget the offences and crimes of her age: And ſo coniuring all olde Widdowes and Wiues, to beware by her mournefull and execrable

crable example; her flames and prayers made expiation for the offence of her body, and her soule mounted and fled to *Heauen*, to craue remission and pardon of *God*, who was the only *Creator* of the one, and *Redeemer* of the other.

And such were the deplorable, yet deserued ends of this bloody and wretched couple, *La Vasseley* and *La Villette*, for so cruelly murthering harmelesse *Gratiana*, and innocent *De Merson*: And thus did *Gods* all-seeing, and sacred Iustice, iustly triumph ore these their crying and execrable crimes. O that their examples may engender and propagate our reformation; and that the reading of this their lamentable *History* may teach vs, not onely how to meditate thereon, but also how to amend thereby.

THE TRIVMPHS OF GODS REVENGE Against the crying and execrable *Sinne of Murther.*

Hiſtory XIV.

Fidelia *and* Cæleſtina *cauſe* Carpi *and* Monteleone, *with their two Laquayes,* Lorenzo *and* Anſelmo, *to murther their Father Captaine* Benevente, *which they performe.* Monteleone *and his Laquay* Anſelmo *are drowned,* Fidelia *hangs her ſelfe,* Lorenzo *is hanged for a robery, and on the gallowes confeſſeth the murthering of* Benevente, Carpi *hath his right hand, then his head cut off;* Cæleſtina *is beheaded and her body burnt.*

OVr beſt parts being our Vertues and our chiefe and Soueraigne Vertue, the purity and ſanctity of our ſelues; how can wee neglect thoſe, or not regard this, except we reſolue to ſee our ſelues miſerable in this life, and our ſoules wretched in that to come: and as charity is the cyment of our other vertues, ſo enuy (her oppoſite) is the ſubuerſion of this our charity; from whence flowes rage, reuenge, and many times murther, (her frequent (and almoſt) her inſeparable companions:)

panions:) but of all degrees of malice and enuy, can there be any so inhumane and diabolicall; as for two graceleſſe daughters to plot the death of their owne father; and to ſeduce and obtaine their two louers to act and performe it: whereof in this enſuing Hiſtory, we ſhall ſee a moſt barbarous and bloody Preſident, as alſo their condigne puniſhments afflicted on them for the ſame. In the reading whereof, O that we may haue the grace by the ſight of theſe their fearefull crimes and puniſhments, to reforme and preuent our owne; that we may looke on their cruelty with charity, on their rage with reaſon, on their errors with compaſſion, on their deſperation with pitty, and on their inhumanity with pietie; that the meditation and contemplation thereof, may terrifie our choller: quench both the fire of our luſt, and the flames of our reuenge; ſo ſhall our faiths be fortified, our paſſions reformed, our affections purified, & our actions eternally both bleſſed and ſanctified: to which end, I haue written and diuulged it. So Chriſtian Reader, if thou make this thy end in peruſing it, thou wilt then not faile to receiue comfort thereby: and therefore faile not to giue God the Glory.

MAny yeeres ſince the Duke of *Oſſuna* (vnder the command of *Spaine* his maſter) was made *Viceroy* of the Noble Kingdome of *Naples*, the which hee gouerned with much reputation and honour, although his fortunes or actions (how iuſtly or iniuſtly I know not) haue ſince ſuffered and receiued an Eclips. In the Cittie of *Otranto*, within the *Prouince* of *Apulia*, there dwelt an ancient rich and valiant *Gentleman*, (nobly deſcended) tearmed Captaine *Benevente*,

uente, who by his deceased Lady *Sophia Elianora*, (Niece to the Duke of *Piombino*) had left him two daughters and a sonne, he tearmed *Signior Richardo Alcasero*, they two, the Ladies *Fidelia* and *Celestina*, names indeed, which they will no way deserue; but from whom they will solely dissent and derogate, through their hellish vices, and inhumane dispositions to blood and murther: we may grace our names, but our names cannot grace vs. *Alcasero* liues not at home with his father, but for the most part at *Naples*, as a chiefe *Gentleman* retayning to the *Vicroy*: where he profiteth so well in riding and tilting (a noble vertue and exercise, (beyond all other *Italians*) naturall and hereditary to the *Neopolitanes*;) that he purchased the name of a bold and braue Caualier, but for *Fidelia* and *Celestina*, the clockes of their youth hauing stroke twentie, and eighteene, the Captaine their father, (thinking it dangerous to haue Ladies of their yeares and descent farre from him) keepes them at home, that his care may prouide them good husbands, and his eye preuent them from matching with others. It is as great a blessing in children to haue louing Parents, as for them to haue obedient children: and had their obedience answered his affection, and their duety his prouidence: we had not seene the Theatre of this their History so besprinkled, and gored with such great effusion of blood.

This Captaine *Beneuente* their father, (for his blood, wealth and generosity) was beloued and honoured of all the Nobility of *Apulia*, and for his many seruices, both by sea and land, was held in so great esteeme in *Otranto*; that his house was an *Academie*, where all the Gallants both of Citie and Countrey resor-

reſorted to backe great Horſes, to runne at the Ring, and to practiſe other ſuch Courtly and Martiall Exerciſes, whereunto this old *Captaine*, as well in his age, as youth, was exceedingly addicted: ſo as the beauty of his two daughters, *Fidelia*, & *Caleſtina* could not be long, either vnſeene, or vnadmired: for they grew ſo perfectly fayre, of ſo ſweet complexions, and proper ſtatures, that they were iuſtly reputed and held to bee the *Paragons* of *Beautie*, not onely of *Apulia*, but of *Italy*: ſo as beautie being the Gold and Diamonds of *Nature*; this of theirs (ſo ſweet in its influence, and ſo excellent and delicious in that ſweetneſſe) drew all mens eyes to loue them, many mens hearts to adore them: ſo had they beene as rich in Vertue, as in Beautie, they had liued more fortunate, and neither their friendes nor enemies ſhould haue liued to haue ſeene them dye ſo miſerably; for now that proues their ruine, which might haue been their glory. They are both of them ſought in marriage, by many *Barons* and *Caualiers*, as well at home as abroad; but the *Captaine* their father will not giue eare, nor hearken to any, nor once permit that ſuch motion be moued him: They are ſo immodeſt, as they grieue hereat, and are extreamely ſorrowfull, to ſee that a few yeares paſt away, makes their Beauties rather fade then flouriſh: where *Vertue* graceth not *Beautie*, as well as *Beautie*, *Vertue*, it is often a preſage and forerunner of a fortune as fatall, as miſerable.

But as their thoughts were too impatient and immodeſt, to giue way to ſuch incontinent and irregular conceits; ſo on the other ſide, the *Captaine* their father, was too ſeuere, and withall too vnkind, I may ſay, cruell, to hinder them from *Marriage*, ſith their

beautie and age had long since made them both meritorious and capable of it: It was in them immodestie; in him, vnkindnesse, to propose such ends to their desires and resolutions: for as hee hath authoritie to exact obedience from them; so haue they likewise reason to expect fatherly affection, and care from him. But hee is more affected and addicted to his wealth and couetousnesse, then inclined to regard his daughters content; and therefore is fully resolued, not as yet to marry them, which is a resolution better left then imbraced, and infringed then kept of him; sith it may bring foorth effects contrary both to his hopes and desires. It is commonly dangerous for *Parents*, to content themselues with their childrens discontents: for where *Nature* is crossed, it many times degenerates, and prooues vnnaturall, as the *Cataracts* of *Nylus* make it submerge and wash *Egypt* with her inundation: But *Fidelia*, and *Celestina*, will make triall of one inuention and conclusion more before they will giue way to their distaste, or strike saile to their choller and reuenge. They see their father is resolute, and seuere in nipping their hopes, and crossing their desires of mariage; and yet they hope, that although they cannot preuaile with him, that their brother *Alcasero* may: to which end, the sooner to obtaine and crowne their desires with content, they consult together, and so by a confident friend of theirs, send him this Letter to *Naples*:

DIspayring of our Fathers resolution to marry vs, wee haue no other refuge or recourse, but to thy selfe, and thy affection, in requesting thee powerfully to solicite him heerein, that hee may not preferre his golde before our

content,

content, and consequently his hopes before our despaire: neither could our hearts or thoughts perswade vs, either to imploy or acquaint any other but thy selfe with these our desires, which Modesty *would haue suppressed, but that* Truth *contradicted and opposed it: for his seueritie and crueltie is such towards vs, that although wee are sought in marriage by diuers* Caualiers *our Superiours, yet hee will not permit vs to bee seene, much lesse to bee wedded of any. Ioyne then thy power to our wishes and prayers, and thy affection to the procuring of our contents; and we then doubt not, but to bee as happy in a* Brother, *as otherwise wee feare, wee shall see our selues vnfortunate, yea, miserable in a* Father: *and as thou canst not forget our diſcent and Blood; so we zealously pray and beseech thee, to remember, if not our Beautie, our Youth.*

FIDELIA.
CÆLESTINA.

Their Brother receiues this their Letter: he is too braue, generous, and courteous, to be vnkind to any, especially to young Ladies, and most especially to his sisters, whose content he makes and reputes his owne. He comes to *Otranto*, deales effectually with the *Captaine* his father herein, who giues him this answere: That he hath prouided the *Baron* of *Carpi* for *Fidelia*, and the Knight *Bartholomeo Monte-leone* for *Cælestina*; and that within fifteene dayes they are to come to *Otranto* to see them: which newes doth exceedingly reioyce first himself, then his sisters: but their ioy shall not last long, but be buried as soone as borne. Within the prefixed time these two Noble men come, but they are hatefull, and not pleasing to *Fidelia*, and *Cælestina*; for the *Baron* of *Carpi* is crook-backt, and

ſquint-eyed, and *Monte-leone* is lame of one leg. Theſe Ladies valewe their beauty at too high a rate, to beſtow it on ſuch deformed husbands: and although *Venus* accepteth of *Vulcan*, yet they will haue none of theſe; becauſe they deeme no hell to that of a diſcontented bed: heretofore they wiſhed for Sutors, and now they wiſh they were well ridd of theſe; and ſo ſacrificing to their owne contents, they ſet vp this reſolution in their hearts & ſoules, that they will rather dye maydens, then liue to ſee themſelues wiues to ſuch husbands. Their father receiues *Carpi* & *Monte-leone* courteouſly, and entertaines them nobly, according to their ranke and merits: he tells his daughters plainely, that they ſhall marry theſe, and none others. Thus the Barke of theſe their reſolutions, are ſurpriſd and beaten with two contrary winds: he will bee obeyed of his daughters, and they will be commanded of their father in all things, but not in this of their Marriage.

It is neuer good for parents, to force the affections of their children in their marriages, ſith it is a buſines which not onely liues, but dyes with them; but withall, their owne wills muſt neither bee their law, nor their guide: for their Parents haue, (or at leaſt ſhould haue) more experience and iudgement then they, to ſee who are, and who are not fit matches for them: But where authority oppoſeth affection, or affection, reaſon, there ſuch marriages are ſtill vſhered on with diſcontent, and wayted and attended on with miſery. Likewiſe, there is a great reſpect and conſideration to be obſerued by Parents, in the inclinations and natures of their children: for ſome will be perſwaded, or reproued with a word, wheras others will become more

more headstrong and rebellious with menaces and threats. Had this Captaine attempted and practised the first, and not the second toward these two Ladies his daughters, peraduenture they had neuer leapt from reason to rage, from obedience to contempt, nor from hope to dispaire; yea, I dare presume to averre with truth and safety, that we should haue seene them all as happie, as I now feare we shall see them miserable.

But to proceed with their History, they are pressed by the Captaine their father, and importuned by the two noble men their Sutors, to finish and confirme these contracts. But *Fidelea* and *Cælestina* with a true semblance of distaste, and yet a false shew of curtesie, giue the deniall to their father in particular tearmes, and to them in generall: He stormes at their disobedience, and they impute this excuse of theirs, to modestie, rather then vnkindnesse: They flatter themselues with this hope, that sith they are fayre, they must be courteous, and cannot be cruell; or if the contrary, that the Captaine their father will so manage his daughters affections, as all things shall sort to their desires and expectations; but they shall come too short of their hopes: for they are neither reserued for the Ladies, nor the Ladies for them: but whiles thus they are busie in aduancing the processe of their affections, *Fidelia* and *Cælestina* attempt a contrary enterprise: for they with teares and prayers, request their brother *Alcasero*, importunately to solicite their Father in their behalfe: that he will not enforce them to marry those whom they cannot affect, much lesse obey: which like a noble and deare brother hee performes with much zeale and perswasion: but hee

cannot preuaile with him, nor bring them any other answere, then that they must and shall marry them, and onely them.

Had this resolution of their father beene more curteous, and lesse rigorous towards his daughters, this History of theirs, had not deserued so much pitty and compassion, nor would haue drawen so many sighes from the hearers, or teares from the Readers: for now seeing their father cruelly resolued to offer violence to their affections, they begin to hate him, because he wil not better loue them. And here (O here) they enter into deuilliſh machinations, and helliſh conspiracies against him: for as he plots their discontents, so doe they his destruction. *Fidelia* and *Celestina* see their blood, and cause one, and therefore so they pretend shall be their fortunes: they would reueale their intents and designes each to other, but the fact is so foule and vnnaturall, as for a whiles they cannot, but they need no other Oratory then their owne sullen and discontented lookes, for either of them may read a whole Lecture of griefe and choller in each others eyes, till at length tyred with the importunity of their father, and the impaciency of *Carpi*, and *Monteleone*: *Fidelia* as the more audacious of the two, first breakes it to her sister *Celestina*, in this manner. That she had rather die, then be compelled to marry one whom she cannot affect: that the *Baron* of *Carpi* is not for her, nor she for him; and that sith her father is resolute in this match, (although she be his daughter) shee had rather see him laid in his graue, then her selfe in *Carpi's* bedde. There needs not many reasons, to perswade that which we desire, For *Celestina* tells her sister plainely, that she (in all points)

points) ioynes and concurres in opinion with her, adding withall, that the ſooner their father is diſpatched, the better; becauſe ſhe knowes they ſhall neuer receiue any content on *Earth*, till he be in *Heauen*: and ſo they conclude he ſhall die.

But *alas*, what helliſh & deuiliſh daughters are theſe, to ſeeke the death of their father, of whom they haue receiued their liues? who euer read of a *Parracide* more inhumanely cruell, or impiouſly bloody? ſo if euer murther went vnreuenged, this will not; for wee ſhall ſee the Authors and Actors thereof moſt ſeuerely puniſhed for the ſame. Men and women may bee ſecret in their ſinnes, but *God* will be iuſt in his decrees, and ſacred in his iudgements: what a religious reſolution had it beene in them, to haue retired, and not aduanced in this their damnable attempt; but they are too prophane, to haue ſo much pitty, and too outragious to hearken to this religious reaſon: yea, they are too impious to hearken to *Grace*, and too reuengefull and Bloody minded, to giue eare either to *Reaſon*, *Duetie*, or *Religion*. So now like two incenſed and implacable furies, they conſult how and in what manner they may free themſelues of their father: *Fidelia* propoſeth diuers degrees and ſeuerall ſorts of murthers, but *Celeſtina* likes none of them, in ſome ſhe finds too much danger, in others too little aſſurance; and therefore as young as ſhe is, ſhe inuents a plot, as ſtrange as ſubtil, and as malitious & diabollical as ſtrange: ſhe informes her, that to be rid of her father, there cannot be a ſecurer courſe then to ingage the *Baron* of *Carpi*, and the Knight of *Monteleone* to murther him: *Fidelia* wonders hereat, ſaying, it will be impoſſible for them to be drawen to performe it;

it, sith they both know and see, that the *Captaine* their father loues them so well, as will or nill, they must be their husbands. But *Celestina's* reuengefull plot is further fetcht, and more cunningly spunne: for she hath not begun it, to leaue it raw and vnfinished; but is so confident in her deuillish industry, as she affirmes shee will perfect and make it good. *Fidelia* demaunds how. *Celestina* answereth, That they both must make a feigned and flattering shew, to change their distaste, and now to affect *Carpi*, and *Monte-leone*, whom before they could not: that hauing in this manner drawen them to their lure, when they attempt to vrge Marriage, they shall both agree to informe them, that it is impossible for them to obtaine it, whiles the Captaine their father liues, sith albeit in outward appearance hee make a faire shew to make them their husbands, yet that he meanes and intends nothing lesse; for that he hath giuen them expresse charge and command (at any hand) not to loue or affect them; which is the maine and sole cause, that hath so long withheld them from making sooner demonstrations of their affections towards them: and this (quoth shee) will occasion and prouoke them to attempt it; adding, that by this meanes, they may giue two strokes with one stone, and so not onely be rid of our father, but likewise of *Carpi* and *Monte-leone*, who peraduenture may be apprehended, and executed for the fact; and for our safegard and security, we will powerfully coniure and sweare them to secrecie.

There is no webb finer then that of the Spider, nor treachery subtiller then that of a woman, especially if shee contemne Charity for Reuenge, her Soule for her Body, *God* for *Sathan*, and consequently *Heauen* for

for *Hell*: how else could this young Lady lodge so reuengeful a heart in so sweet a body? or shroud such bloody conceits and inuentions vnder so faire and so beautifull a complexion?

But the *Panther*, though his skinne be faire, yet his breath is infectious: and we many times see, that the fouleſt Snake lurkes vnder the greeneſt and beautifulleſt leaues. *Fidelia* giues an attentiue eare to this her ſiſters bloody *Stratagem* and deſigne: ſhee finds it ſure, and the probabilities thereof apparant and eaſie, and therefore approues of it. So theſe two beautifull, yet bloody ſiſters vow, without delay, to ſet it on foot, and in practiſe. It is the nature of *Reuenge*, to looke forwards, ſeldome backwards: but did we meaſure the beginning by the end, as well as the end by the beginning, our affections would ſauour of far more Religion, and of farre leſſe impietie, and wee ſhould then reioyce in that which wee muſt now repent, but cannot remedy. They take time at aduantage, and pertinently acquaint *Carpi* and *Monte-leone* with it. The paſſions of affection prooue often more powerfull then thoſe of Reaſon, they ſuffer themſelues to bee vanquiſhed and ledd away by the pure beautie and ſweet *Oratory* of theſe two diſcontented and treacherous Ladies, without conſidering what poyſon lurkes vnder their ſpeeches, and danger vnder their tongues: They commit a groſſe and maine errour, in relying more on the daughters youth, then the fathers grauitie; on their verball, then his reall affection; and ſo they ingage themſelues to the daughters, in a very ſhort time to free them of the *Captaine* their father. It was a baſe vice in Gentlemen of their ranke, to violate the Lawes of Hoſpitalitie, in ſo high

a degree, as to kill him, who loued them ſo dearely, and entertained them ſo courteouſly; and it is ſtrange, that both their humours were ſo ſtrangely vitious, as to concurre and ſympathize in the attempt of this execrable murther: But what cannot vice performe, or Ladies procure of their Louers, ar leaſt if they loue Beautie better then Vertue, and Pleaſure, then Pietie?

Captaine *Benevente* is many times accuſtomed after dinner to ride to his Vineyard, and now and then to *Alpiata*; a neighbour village, where he is familiarly (if not too familiarly) acquainted with a Tennants wife of his, whom he loued in her youth, and cannot forſake in her middle age: perſeuerance in vice neuer makes a good end: a ſingle ſinne is diſtaſtfull; but the redoubling thereof, is both hatefull and odious to God. *Carpi* and *Monte-leone* take their two Laquaies, *Lorenzo* and *Anſelmo* with them, aſſoone as they know the *Captaine* to be abroad, onely accompanied with his confident Gentleman *Fiamento*; and diſguiſing themſelues, they watch him at the corner of a wood, where of neceſſitie hee muſt paſſe. The euent anſwereth their bloody expectations and deſires: they ſee *Benevente* and *Fiamento* approching, riding a ſoft trot; when like ſo many Fiends and Deuils, they all foure ruſh forth the thickets, and (without any other forme) with their Swords and Piſtols, (after ſome reſiſtance) kill them dead to the ground: but this is not the end of their helliſh malice and enuy; neither is the vnſatiable thirſt of their reuenge yet quenched: for they take theſe two murthered bodies (who are a freſh reeking and weltring in their blood) and carry them to a neighbour hill, and ſo throw them down into a deepe quarry

quarry full of thicke buſhes and brambles, whereas they thought no mortall eye ſhould euer haue ſeene them more, & then and there they conſult vpon their flight. *Carpi* reſolues to take poaſt for *Naples*, and there for a time to ſhroud himſelfe among the multitude of the *Nobilitie* and *Coaches*, which grace and adorne that Citie: And *Monte-leone* reſolues to hye towards *Brunduſium*, with intent, that if theſe murthers were reuealed, and himſelfe detected and accuſed, he would there embarque himſelfe either for *Venice*, or *Malta*: but he hath not as yet made his peace and reckoning with God.

Leaue wee *Carpi*, and his Laquay poaſting for *Naples*, and let vs ſee what accident will ſpeedily befall *Monte-leone*. It is impoſſible for murther to goe long vnpuniſhed; *Monte-leone* and his Laquay *Anſelmo* ſhal ere they ride farre, ſee this poſition verified in themſelues: He is prouided of two faire Gennets, one for himſelfe, the other for his Laquay, and hauing taken his leaue of *Carpi*, away he goes for *Brunduſium*, but he hath not ridden paſt twelue miles, before his owne horſe fell downe dead vnder him, which doth ſomething afflict and amaze him; but this is but the leaſt part of his miſery, and but the very beginning of his misfortune; he is enforced to make a vertue of neceſſitie, ſo he rides his Laquayes horſe, and he followes him on foot. It is impoſſible for a guiltie conſcience to be ſecured from feare: he rides narrow lanes, and by-wayes, but at laſt neere the village *Blanquettelle* he meets with a ſwift Ford, which is paſſable for horſe, but not for foot: Here *Monte-leone* is conſtrained to take vp his Laquay *Anſelmo* behind him, which hee doth; but being in the midſt thereof, the horſe ſtum-

bles, and falls with both of them vnder him; which is done so suddenly, that *Monte-leone* had no time to cast off his Laquay, and so they are both drowned, and haue neither the *Grace* nor power to breath, or speake a word more.

Gods iudgements are secret and inscrutable: had they had time to repent, they had onely lost their liues; whereas now it is rather to be feared, then wished, they likewise runne the hazard of their soules. But as it is a vertue to thinke and censure charitably of the dead, so it must needs be a vice to doe the contrary. Heretofore they thirsted for blood, and (loe) now they haue their fill of water. All Elements are the seruants of *God*, but these two of fire and water, are the most terrible, the most impetuous. We haue but one way to come into the world, but diuers to go out of it: This is a testimony of our weaknesse, and of Gods power.

By this time Captaine *Benevente*, and his man *Fiamento* are found wanting, and no newes to be had them: his house rings, & resounds with sorrow, all his seruants & friends mourn and lament for his absence, and his two accursed daughters, they seeme to be all in teares heereat: but wee shall shortly see this their hypocrisie and dissimulation both detected and reuenged. They lay all the Country to purchase newes of their father, and speedily by poast aduertise their brother *Alcasero* hereof at *Naples*, who amazed hereat, comes away with all possible speed and expedition: His two sisters and himselfe wonderfully mourne and lament for the absence of their father; and now seeing fiue dayes past, and no newes of him, they begin to suspect and feare, that he is made away

and

and murthered; and becauſe *Fiamento* was alone with him, they ſuſpect him of the fact, which they are the ſooner induced to beleeue, in regard hee is fled, and not to bee found: but they ſhall ſoone ſee the contrary; and that as hee was a faithfull ſeruant to their father his maſter, during his life, ſo hee was a true companion to him in his death. And although *Alcaſero* his ſonne vſe all poſſible zeale and induſtry to find out his father, yet ſith Earth cannot, now Heauen will reueale the newes, and ſight of him. For as ſome neigbouring Gentlemen (his kinſfolkes and friends) are hunting of a Stagge neere *Alpiata*, they purſue him on horſebacke ſome fiue or ſixe houres; and at laſt being tyred, he runnes for refuge and ſhelter, thorow the buſhes and bryers, into the ſame olde Quarry, where the dead bodies of Captaine *Benevente*, and his man *Fiamento* were throwen. The Gentlemen Hunters deſcend from their horſes, and with their ſwordes drawen, enter purpoſely to kill the Stagge, which they performe; when caſting aſide their eyes, they ſee two dead mens bodies, one neere the other, whoſe leggs, hands, and faces the Crowes had pitifully mangled and defaced. They are amazed at this mournefull and vnlooked for ſpectacle, when approaching to diſcerne them, they by their clothes find, and know them to be Captain *Benevente*, and his Gentleman *Fiamento*. They are aſtoniſhed & amazed hereat, and ſo one of them rides backe poaſt to *Otranto*, to acquaint *Alcaſero* his ſonne hereof, who melting into teares, returnes with him neere to *Alpiata*, where to his vnſpeakeable griefe, hee ſees the dead bodyes both of his father and *Fiamento*, which before all the Hunters he cauſed to be ſearched, and finds that

his father (with a Piſtoll bullet) was ſhot thorow the head in two places, and runne thorow the body with a Rapier in three; and that *Fiamento* had fiue deepe wounds with a Rapier, and once ſhot thorowe the head. *Alcaſero*, and the whole company grieue and lament at this ſorrowfull newes; they know well that *Fiamento* did not ſet vpon the *Captaine* his father, and that neither of them had Piſtolls: and though they might imagine it done by theeues, yet they were quickly cleared of that ielouſie and ſuſpition, becauſe they finde rich Rings on his maſters fingers, and ſtore of gold in his pockets: So they referring the diſcouery of this bloody and damnable murther to *Time*, and to *God*, the Author and giuer of *Time*, *Alcaſero* cauſeth the dead bodies, firſt of his father, then of *Fiamento* to be layd in a Coach, which he had purpoſely cauſed to be brought thither; and ſo accompanied with all the Gentlemen, returnes with it to *Otranto*, where all the whole Citie lament and bewayle his tragicall diſaſter: and becauſe theſe dead corpes of theirs haue receiued wrong, in being ſo long aboue ground, *Alcaſero* that night giues them their due burialls, interring *Fiamento* decently, and his father honourably, according as the neceſſity and ſtrictneſſe of the time would permit him.

It is now *Alcaſero's* curioſitie and care, to ſeeke out the murtherers of his *Father*; and for his ſiſters, they are ſo irreligious and wretched, as they think to mock God, and delude the world with their immoderate, yet counterfeit mourning; but it proceeds not from their hearts, much leſſe from their ſoules. The morrow after their Fathers buriall, they are all three informed, that *Monte-leone* and his Laquay *Anſelmo*, are

are drownd, as they paſt the Riuer *Blanquestelle*; wher-at he wonders, and his two ſiſters reioyce and tryumph, eſpecially *Celeſtina*, who now ſees her ſelfe freed, not onely of the *Captaine* her father whom ſhe hated, but alſo of the Knight *Monte-leone* her Sutor, whom ſhee could not loue: Shee is ſo impious and graceleſſe, as ſhe doth reioyce, but will neither repent nor pitie at theſe accidents; yea, ſhe ſo ſleightly and triuially paſſeth ouer the remembrance of her fathers vntimely and bloody death, as if murther were no ſinne, or that *God* had ordained no puniſhment for it: Shee weares her mourning attire and weeds, more for ſhew then ſorrow: for her father was no ſooner layd in his graue, but ſhe builds many Caſtles of pleaſure in the aire of her extrauagant & ambitious thoughts, vowing that ere long, ſhee will haue a *Gallant* of her owne chooſing to her husband: but ſhee may come too ſhort of her hopes, and perchance finde a halter for her necke, before a wedding Ring for her finger. As for her brother *Alcaſero*, his thoughts are roauing and roaming another way: for he finds it ſtrange, that the *Barron* of *Carpi* comes not to condole with him for his father, and to continue his ſuit and affection to his ſiſter *Fidelia*, whereat hee both admires and wonders, and not onely takes it in ill part, but alſo begins to ſuſpect, and to caſt many doubts and iealouſies thereon; and what the iſſue thereof will bee, or what effects it will produce, we ſhall ſhortly ſee. But a moneth or two being blowen away, *Carpi* hearing no ſuſpition or talke of him, and thinking all things in a readineſſe for him to bee aſſured, and contracted to his Lady and Miſtris *Fidelia*, hee takes a newe Lacquay, and apparrelling him

in

in a contrary Liuery, ſends him ſecretly to *Otranto*, with this Letter to her:

THere are ſome reaſons that ſtay mee for not comming to Otranto, *to condole with thee for the death of thy Father, which what they are, none can better imagine then thy ſelfe: when thy ſorrowes are ouerblowen, I will come to thee, in hope to bee as ioyfull in thy preſence, as thy abſence makes me miſerable. I haue giuen thee ſo true and ſo reall a proofe of my affection, as thou ſhouldeſt offer mee palpable iniuſtice, and to thy ſelfe extreame iniury to doubt thereof. For what greater teſtimony canſt thou iuſtrely expect, then to beleeue I will euer prefer thy loue before mine owne life: if thy conſtancy anſwer mine,* Heauen *may, but* Earth *cannot croſſe our deſires. I pray ſignifie mee how thy brother ſtands affected to our affections; thy anſweres ſhall haue many kiſſes, and I will euer both honour and bleſſe the hand that writ it.*

CARPI.

The Laquay comes to *Otranto*, and findes out *Fidelia*, to whom (with much care and ſecrecie) he deliuers his Maſters Lettter, and commends, and requeſteth an anſwere. *Fidelia* receiues the one, and promiſeth the other: but ſhee is perplexed and troubled in mind. Heere her thoughts make a ſtand, and conſule whether ſhee ſhall open this Letter, or no. Her Conſcience hath heretofore yeelded to the death of her Father; and now Religion beginnes to work vpon the life of her Conſcience, which indeed is that of her Soule. Had ſhee perſeuered in this courſe of pietie, her repentance might haue pleaded for her diſobedience, and her contrition redeemed her crime; but

but ſhee forſakes the Helme that might haue ſteered her to the Port of happineſſe, and ſafetie; and ſo fills the ſayles of her reſolutions with the winde of deſpayre, which threaten no leſſe then to ſplit the Barke of her life on the rocks of her deſtruction and death. Shee now beginnes to hate company, which before ſhe loued, and to loue ſolitarineſſe, which before ſhee hated; yea, the liuing picture of her dead Father, doth ſo haunt her thoughts, and frequent her imaginations, that whereſoeuer ſhee is, it is preſent with her. Remorſe, as a *Vulture* gnawes at her heart and conſcience; yea, though nothing do feare her, yet ſhe feares all things. Shee ſees no man running behinde her, but ſhe thinks he purpoſely followes her to drag her to priſon: ſhee is afraid of her owne ſhaddow, and thinkes, that not onely euery tower, but euery houſe will fall vpon her: ſhe will not come into any Boat, nor paſſe by any Riuer, Brook, or well, for feare of drowning. This diſpaire of hers cauſeth her to be cold in her Religion, and frozen in her Prayers, which ſhould bee both the preſeruatiue, and *Antidote* of the ſoule: her ſpeeches for the moſt part, are confuſed and diſtracted, and her looks ſullen, fearfull, and gaſtly (the proper ſignes and ſymptomes of deſpaire.) *Carpi's* Laquay hauing ſtayed two dayes in *Otranto* for his anſwer, holds it his dutie to importune *Fidelia* to bee diſpatched, the which that night ſhe promiſeth him; and now in a ſad and melancholly humour ſhe breaks off *Carpi's* Letter, and peruſeth it; which not onely renewes, but reuiues the remembrance of her fathers death; whereat ſhe enters into ſo ſtrange and ſo implacable a paſſion, as ſhee once had thought to haue throwen his Letter into the fire, and her ſelfe after.

Now ſhee is reſolued to write backe to *Carpi*, and then preſently ſhee changeth her reſolution, and vowes ſhee will anſwere him with ſilence. But the Deuill is as ſubtill as malicious; and ſo ſhee calles for Pen and Inke, and out of the dregs of diſcontent, and the gall of deſpayre, writes and returnes him this anſwere:

MY Fathers death hath altered my diſpoſition; for I am now wholly addicted to mourning, & not to mariage. I pray trouble not thy ſelfe to leaue Naples, *to come to condole with mee in* Otranto: *for the beſt comfort that I can receiue, is that it is impoſsible for me to receiue any: I neuer doubted of thy affection, nor will giue thee any iuſt cauſe to ſuſpect, much leſſe to feare mine. If this will not ſuffice, reſt aſſured I haue reſolued, that either my graue, or thy ſelfe ſhall be my Husband. How my Brother ſtands affected to thee, is a thing difficult for mee to vnderſtand or know, ſith I am onely his* Siſter, *not his* Secretary; *but in all outward appearance, I thinke hee neither loues thee for my ſake, nor my ſelfe for thine. Liue thou as happy, as I feare I ſhall dye miſerable.*

FIDELIA.

What a fearefull Letter is this, either for *Fidelia* to ſend, or *Carpi* to receiue: but her diſtempered and diſtracted ſpirits can affoord no other; and therefore ſhe diſpatcheth away the Laquay with this. And now (as if her thoughts tranſported her to hell) ſhee cannot be alone, for the Deuill is ſtill with her: hee appeares to her in the ſhape of an *Angell* of Light, and proffers her mountaines of *Wealth*, and worldes of *Honour*, if ſhee will fall downe and adore him. To rebell

rebell againſt God is a ſinne; but to perſeuere in our rebellion, is not onely a contempt, but a treaſon in the higheſt degree againſt God. The beſt of Gods people are commonly tempted, but thoſe are and prooue the worſt, who are ouercome with temptation. *Fortitude* is a principall and *ſoueraigne vertue* in *Chriſtians*; and if we vanquiſh the Deuill, it is good for vs that he aſſaulted vs, ſith thoſe Victories (as well ſpirituall as temporall) are euer moſt glorious and honourable, which are atchieued with greateſt danger. Had *Fidelia* followed the current of this counſell, and the ſtreame of this aduiſe, ſhee had neuer been ſo weake with *God*, nor ſo vnfaithfull to her ſelfe, as to deſtroy her ſelfe: but forſaking *God*, and contemning prayer, which is the true way to the trueſt felicitie, what can ſhee hope for but diſpaire, or expect but deſtruction? Her brother *Alcaſero*, and many of her kinsfolkes, neighbours, and friends (with their beſt zeale, and poſſible power) endeauour to perſwade and comfort her; they exhort her to reade religious Bookes, and continually to pray: Shee hearkeneth to both theſe counſells, but neither can, or will not follow either: Her ſleepes are but broken ſlumbers, and her ſlumbers but diſtracted dreames; and euer and anon it ſeemes (to the eyes of her mind and body) that the *Captaine* her father, doth both ſpeake to her, and follow her. In a word, ſhe is weary both of this world, and of her life; yea, diſpaire, or rather the Deuill hath reduced her to this extreame miſery, and miſerable extremitie, that ſhe is ready to kiſſe that hand that would kill her, or that *Death* which would giue her death. Shee neuer ſees a knife in the hands of another, but ſhee wiſheth it in her owne heart: her Conſcience doth ſo terri-

Now ſhee is reſolued to write backe to *Carpi*, and then preſently ſhee changeth her reſolution, and vowes ſhee will anſwere him with ſilence. But the Deuill is as ſubtill as malicious; and ſo ſhee calles for Pen and Inke, and out of the dregs of diſcontent, and the gall of deſpayre, writes and returnes him this anſwere:

MY Fathers death hath altered my diſpoſition; for I am now wholly addicted to mourning, & not to mariage. I pray trouble not thy ſelfe to leaue Naples, *to come to condole with mee in* Otranto: *for the beſt comfort that I can receiue, is that it is impoßible for me to receiue any: I neuer doubted of thy affection, nor will giue thee any iuſt cauſe to ſuſpect, much leſſe to feare mine. If this will not ſuffice, reſt aſſured I haue reſolued, that either my graue, or thy ſelfe ſhall be my Husband. How my Brother ſtands affected to thee, is a thing difficult for mee to vnderſtand or know, ſith I am onely his* Siſter, *not his* Secretary; *but in all outward appearance, I thinke hee neither loues thee for my ſake, nor my ſelfe for thine. Liue thou as happy, as I feare I ſhall dye miſerable.*

FIDELIA.

What a fearefull Letter is this, either for *Fidelia* to ſend, or *Carpi* to receiue: but her diſtempered and diſtracted ſpirits can affoord no other; and therefore ſhe diſpatcheth away the Laquay with this. And now (as if her thoughts tranſported her to hell) ſhee cannot be alone, for the Deuill is ſtill with her: hee appeares to her in the ſhape of an *Angell* of Light, and proffers her mountaines of *Wealth*, and worldes of *Honour*, if ſhee will fall downe and adore him. To rebell

rebell againſt God is a ſinne; but to perſeuere in our rebellion, is not onely a contempt, but a treaſon in the higheſt degree againſt God. The beſt of Gods people are commonly tempted, but thoſe are and prooue the worſt, who are ouercome with temptation. *Fortitude* is a principall and *ſoueraigne vertue* in *Chriſtians*; and if we vanquiſh the Deuill, it is good for vs that he aſſaulted vs, ſith thoſe Victories (as well ſpirituall as temporall) are euer moſt glorious and honourable, which are atchieued with greateſt danger. Had *Fidelia* followed the current of this counſell, and the ſtreame of this aduiſe, ſhee had neuer been ſo weake with *God*, nor ſo vnfaithfull to her ſelfe, as to deſtroy her ſelfe: but forſaking *God*, and contemning prayer, which is the true way to the trueſt felicitie, what can ſhee hope for but diſpaire, or expect but deſtruction? Her brother *Alcaſero*, and many of her kinſfolkes, neighbours, and friends (with their beſt zeale, and poſſible power) endeauour to perſwade and comfort her; they exhort her to reade religious Bookes, and continually to pray: Shee hearkeneth to both theſe counſells, but neither can, or will not follow either: Her ſleepes are but broken ſlumbers, and her ſlumbers but diſtracted dreames; and euer and anon it ſeemes (to the eyes of her mind and body) that the *Captaine* her father, doth both ſpeake to her, and follow her. In a word, ſhe is weary both of this world, and of her life; yea, diſpaire, or rather the Deuill hath reduced her to this extreame miſery, and miſerable extremitie, that ſhe is ready to kiſſe that hand that would kill her, or that *Death* which would giue her death. Shee neuer ſees a knife in the hands of another, but ſhee wiſheth it in her owne heart: her Conſcience doth ſo terri-

bly accuſe her, and her thoughts giue in ſuch bloody euidence against her Conſcience and ſelfe, for occaſioning her fathers murther, that ſhe reſolues ſhe muſt dye, and therefore diſdaines to liue. And now comes her ſiſter *Celeſtina* to her, to perſwade and conferre with her; but ſhee will prooue but a miſerable Comforter. *Fidelia* ſees her with hatred and deteſtation; and when ſhee beginns to ſpeake, very peremptorily and mournfully cuts of her ſpeeches thus: *Ah ſiſter, I would wee had ſlept when we plotted our fathers death; for in ſeeking his ruine, wee ſhall aſſuredly finde out our owne: Prouide you for your ſafetie, for I am paſt hope of mine; and ſo get you out of my ſight.* I know not whether the beginning of this her ſpeech ſauoured more of *Heauen*, then the end thereof doth of *Hell*: for ſure if wee paſſe hope, wee come too ſhort of ſaluation; and if wee forſake that, this infallibly will forſake vs.

This poore, or rather this miſerable *Gentlewoman*, hauing alwayes her murthered *Father* before her eyes (which inceſſantly haunts her as a ghoſt, and yet ſhe is inforced to follow it as her ſhaddow) is powerfully allured and prouoked by the inſtigation of the *Deuill*, in what manner, or at what rate ſoeuer to diſpatch her ſelfe, being ſo wretchedly inſtructed in faith and pietie, as ſhee addes and beleeues, that the end of her life will prooue not onely the end of her afflictions, but the beginning of her ioyes. But, O poore *Fidelia*, with a thouſand pities and teares, I both pitie and grieue, to ſee thee beleeue ſo infernall an Aduocate: for what ioyes either will hee, or can he giue thee? Why, nothing but bondage, for libertie; torments, for pleaſures; and tortures for delights:

or

or if thou wilt haue me shew thee, whereat his flattering oratory, or sugred insinuation tendeth, it is onely to haue thee destroy thy body in earth, that (as a triumph and *Trophee* to the inlargement of his obscure kingdome) hee may drag thy body and soule to hell fire. But *Fidelia* is as constant in her sinne, as impious in her resolution; and so (all delayes set apart) shee seekes the meanes to destroy her selfe: shee procures poyson, and takes it; but the effect & operation thereof answers not her desires. I know not whether she be more impatient to liue, then willing to die. We neuer want inuention, sildome meanes to doe euill: A little penknife of hers, shall in her conceit performe that which poyson could not: she seekes it, and now remembers it is with her paire of kniues in the pocket of her best gowne: she flies to her Wardrope, and so to her pocket, but finds not her kniues, onely she finds her *Naples* silke girdle in stead thereof. The Deuills instruments are neuer farre to seeke; shee thinkes it as good to strangle her throat, as to cut it: And heere comes her mournfull and deplorable *Tragedy*, she returnes swiftly to her chamber, bolts the doore, and so (which I grieue and tremble to relate) fastens it to the teaster of her bed, and there hangs her selfe; and as it is faithfully reported, at that very instant, and for the space of an houre, it thundred and lightned so cruelly, as if *Heauen* and *Earth* were drawing to an end, that not onely the chamber where shee hung, but the whole house shaked thereat. The thunder being past, and the skies cleared, dinner is serued on the Table, and *Alcasero*, and *Celestina* ready to sit, they call for their sister *Fidelia*, but shee is not to bee found. One goes to her chamber, and returnes, that her key is

without ſide, and the doore bolted within, and yet ſhe anſwers not. They both flie from the table to her chamber, and call and knocke, but no anſwere. *Alcaſero* commaunds his men to breake open the doore, which they doe, and there ſees his ſiſter *Fidelea* hanging to the bed-ſtead ſtarke dead. They crie out as affrighted and amazed at this mournefull and pittifull ſpectacle, and with all ſpeed take her downe. But ſhe is breathleſſe, though not cold; and they ſee all her face and body, which was wont to bee as white as ſnow, now to be coale blacke, and to ſtinke infinitely. Theſe are the wofull effects, and lamentable fruites both of *Deſpayre* and *Murther*; O, may *Chriſtians* of all rankes, and of both ſexes, take heed by *Fidelia's* mournefull and miſerable example, and withall remember that murther will ſtill be reuenged and puniſhed, eſpecially that which is perpetrated by *Children* towards their *Parents*; a ſin odious both to God and man, ſith it not onely oppoſeth Nature, but Grace; Earth, but Heauen.

No ſooner (with griefe, and mourning) hath *Alcaſero* buried this his natural, yet vnnaturall ſiſter *Fidelia*, but as his other ſiſter *Celeſtina* weeps for her death, ſo ſhe againe reioyceth that her ſiſter hath no way reuealed the great buſineſſe, which ſo much concernes her, I meane the murther of the *Captaine* her father. But *Time* will detect and reuenge both it and her. And that wee may not ſeeme extrauagant in the narration and vnfolding of this *Hiſtorie*, flie wee from *Otranto* to *Naples*, and leaue wee the fatall and wofull Tragedy of *Fidelia*, to ſpeake a little of the *Baron* of *Carpi* her Louer, who hath yet a great part to act vpon the *Theatre* of this *Hiſtory*.

Hee

He hath no ſooner receiued *Fidelia's* Letter by his Laquay, but he much wonders and grieues at the contents thereof: hee ſees her cold in her affection towards him, & hote in deſpaire to her ſelfe; and thinks, that as it is in her power to reioyce him with her affection, ſo it may be in his to comfort her with his preſence: but her requeſt and his Conſcience informe him, that it is yet too ſoone to leaue *Naples*, to ſee *Otranto*; and yet that he may not faile in the complement and dutie of a Louer, hee reſolues to viſit her by Letter, though not in perſon, and ſo writes her theſe few Lines:

WEre thy requeſt not my Law, I would ſee Fidelia *to comfort her, and comfort my ſelfe to ſee her: But ſith I muſt bee ſo vnfortunate, as in one Letter to receiue two different ſorrowes, my refuſall, and thy deſpaire: what remedy (or* Antidote*) can I more aptly adminiſter, then* Patience *to the firſt, and* Prayer *to the ſecond. If thou weigh matters aright, I haue more occaſion of ſorrowe then thy ſelfe, and yet I am ſo farre from deſpayring, as I hope* Time *will giue thee conſolation, and mee* Content. *Endeauour to loue thy ſelfe, and not to hate mee: ſo ſhalt thou drawe felicitie out of affliction, and I ſecuritie out of danger. I hope thy Brother will not follow thy fathers ſteppes, his affection to thee ſhall bee mine to himſelfe: Let thy ſecond Letter giue mee but halfe as much ioy, as thy firſt did griefe, and I ſhall then tryumph at my good fortune, as much as I now lament and pitie thine, and in that mine owne.*

CARPI.

Hee

Hee ſends this Letter of his to *Otranto*, by his Laquay *Fieſco*, who carried his firſt, but he muſt go into another world, if hee meane to deliuer it to *Fidelia*: He comes to *Otranto*, and repayres to Captaine *Beneuente's* houſe: whereas hee is walking in the ſecond Court. *Alcaſero* being very ſolitary and penſiue at a window, leaning his head on his hand, and deepely and ſeriouſly thinking what two fatall diſaſters were befallen his houſe, as the loſſe of his Father and ſiſter, he by chance eſpies this Laquay *Fieſco*; at whoſe ſight his heart beats, and his blood very ſuddenly flaſheth vp in his face: he exceedingly wonders hereat, and attributing euery extraordinary motion in himſelfe a ſtep or degree to the diſcouery of his fathers murther, whereon his thoughts were alwayes fixed, and could neuer be withdrawen: he ſends a Gentleman of his named *Plantinus*, to enquire whoſe Laquay it was, and what was his buſineſſe. *Plantinus* deſcends, and examineth him; but hee is cloſe, and will reueale nothing. He entreats him to enter, and taſte the Wine, the which hee doth; when ingaging, and leauing him in the Celler, he trips vp to his Maſter, and acquaints him with his anſwere, adding withall, that ſome fifteene dayes ſince, he ſaw him heere before. *Alcaſero* commands this Laquay to be brought before him; he examines him, but he will not diſcouer himſelfe: he threatens him with the whip, and impriſonment, but he cannot preuaile. It is a vertue in a Seruant, to conceale his maſters ſecrets. *Alcaſero* is angry at his ſilence, and fidelitie, yet commends him: he bethinks himſelfe of another courſe & ſubtiltie, as well knowing, that faire words may obtaine that which threats cannot; he prayes him to dine with his ſeruants, and enioy-

enioyneth *Plautinus* to bring him to him in the Garden after dinner, the which he doth: *Alcaſero* takes him apart, and tells him, that ſome fifteen dayes paſt, he ſaw him here. *Fieſco* anſwereth him with ſilence. *Alcaſero* finds much perturbation in his heart, and diſtraction in his lookes and ſpeeches: hee thinkes this boy can reueale ſomething which he ought to know, and therefore thinkes to ſurpriſe him with a ſiluer hooke; hee profers him twenty *Duckets*, and layes it downe before him, to diſcouer himſelfe and his buſineſſe.

Golde is, but ought not bee a powerfull bayt to indiſcretion and pouertie. It is a poynt of ſmall wiſdome in *Noblemen*, to commit ſecrets of importance to thoſe who haue too much folly, and too little iudgment to conceale them. The ſight of this gold doth not onely daſle *Fieſco's* eyes, but ecclipſe his fidelity; ſo he holds it no ſinne towards God, nor treachery towards his maſter, to reueale it; but takes it, and informes him, that he is the *Baron* of *Carpi* his Laquay, who ſent him from *Naples* thither, with a letter from him to the Lady *Fidelia* his ſiſter. *Alcaſero* growes pale heereat, and is very curious and haſtie to ſee the Letter. *Fieſco* deliuers it him, who ſteps aſide, and reades it: whereon he plucks his hat downe his forehead, and ſo making three or foure paces, reads it ore againe. He is perplexed to know as much as he ſees, and grieued, not to ſee and find as much as he deſireth to know: hee now confirmes his former ſuſpition of *Carpi*, and beleeues that hee is a chiefe Actor, or Agent in his fathers *Tragedy*. But hee knowes it wiſdome to vſe ſilence in the diſcouery of a crime of this nature; and therefore calles *Fieſco* to him, bids him

ſtay that night, and to ſpeake with him in the morning before he depart.

Alcaſero withdrawes himſelfe from the Garden to his Cloſet, and there againe peruſeth this Letter of *Carpi's*: he finds it full of ſuſpition, and ambiguities, and perceiues it hath a relation to former Letters; yea, there is a myſterie in this Letter, the which hee muſt vnlocke and find out, ere he be ſatisfied: for although *Carpi* be ſquint-eyed, yet hee feares hee hath looked too right on his father. Hee flyes to *Fidelia's* Cloſet, Trunke, and Casket, and finds a former Letter of *Carpi's* to her, and the copie of one of hers to him; and the peruſall of theſe two Letters are ſo far from diminiſhing his ſuſpition, as it doth augment and encreaſe it: for now hee verily beleeues, that *Carpi* and his ſiſter *Fidelia*, haue ioyntly had a great hand in his fathers murther. But all this while hee doth not once ſo much as ſuſpect or imagine, that his other ſiſter *Caleſtina* hath played any part in this *Tragedy*: but *Time* is the daughter of *Truth*, as *Truth* is that of *Heauen*. In the morne, he calles for *Fieſco*, to whom he giues this farewell: *Tell the* Baron *of* Carpi *thy Maſter, that my ſiſter* Fidelia *is in another world, and not in this, and that ſhortly I reſolue to ſee him at* Naples, *and that in the interim, I will reſerue his Letter.* *Fieſco* departs, but knowes, he hath ſo highly betrayed and wronged his Maſter, as he dares not ſee him, and ſo ſhewes him a faire paire of heeles. Such Laquayes farre better deſerue a halter, then a Liuery. *Carpi* wonders at his Laquayes long ſtay: In which meane time *Alcaſero* comes to *Naples*, where hee is yet irreſolute, whether to accuſe *Carpi* by the order and courſe of Law, or to fight with him: but hee reſolues

ſolues to doe both; and that if the Law will not right him for the murther of his father, his ſword ſhall. He goes to the *Criminell Iudges*, and with much paſſion and ſorrow, accuſeth the *Barron* of *Carpi* for murthering of the Captaine *Benevente* his father; and for proofe hereof, produceth his two Letters to his ſiſter *Fidelia*, and the copie of one of hers to him. Whereupon the Iudges graunt power to apprehend *Carpi*, ſo hee is taken and conſtituted priſoner: and now hee hath leaſure to thinke of the baſeneſſe and fouleneſſe of his fact. But he is ſo farre from deiecting himſelfe to ſorrow, or addicting himſelfe to repentance, as he puts a brazen face on his lookes and ſpeeches, and ſo peremptorily intends and reſolues to deny all. Had he had more grace, or leſſe impietie, he would haue made better vſe of this his impriſonment, and haue ſhewen himſelfe, at leaſt humble, if not ſorrowfull, for his offence and crime. But he holds it wiſdome, in greateſt dangers to ſhew moſt courage and reſolution, and ſo makes himſelfe fit to grapple and encounter with all accidents and occurrences whatſoeuer.

Men may palliate their ſinnes, but God will finde them out, and diſplay them in their naked colours. *Alcaſero* is an importunate ſolicitor to the Iudges to draw and haſten on *Carpi* his arraignment: But they (reſembling themſelues) proceed therin modeſtly and grauely: they conſult, and conſider the three Letters: they find coniecturall circumſtances enow to accuſe, but no ſollid proofe to condemne him: they hold, that their opinions ought not to be ſwayed with the winde of euery preſumption, and that it is not fit ſo triuially to ſet the life of a man at ſix and ſeauen. Beſides, as they approoue of *Alcaſero* his affection to his

father, ſo they diſlike of his impetuoſitie and vehemency towards *Carpi*. They all reſolue to lay the Sword of *Iuſtice*, in the ballance of *Equitie*, and then ordaine that *Carpi* ſhall be rackt, to ſee whether they can draw more light from his tongue, then from his pen. But hee indures theſe his tortures and torments with wonderfull conſtancy, and ſtill denyes all. Had his cauſe been more religious and humane, and not ſo bloody, this fortitude and courage of his, had been as praiſe-worthy, as now it is odious and execrable. The *Court* by ſentence (pronounced in open *Senate*) acquit and cleare *Carpi* of this murther: whereat *Alcaſero* exceedingly repines and murmures.

It is not enough that *Carpi* hath now eſcaped this danger; for *Alcaſero* remaines ſtill conſtant in his conceit, that he is the murtherer of his father, and therefore vowes and reſolues to fight with him: Hee lets paſſe ſome ſixe weekes time, till hee bee ſound of his limbs, and then reſolues to ſend him a challenge. Had *Carpi* been innocent, it had been more honorable and requiſit, that he had challenged *Alcaſero*, then *Alcaſero* him: but his cauſe being vniuſt, and his Conſcience fearefull, he dares not runne the hazard, to be deſirous or ambitious to fight with *Alcaſero*: the which if hee had attempted, *Alcaſero* will anticipate and preuent him; who making *Plantinus* his Second, he out of the aſhes of his ſorrow, and the fire of his reuenge, ſends him to *Carpi* with this Billet of Defiance:

ALthough the Law haue cleared thee for the murther of my Father, yet my Conſcience cannot, and my Rapyer will not. I ſhould bee a Monſter of Nature, *not to ſeeke reuenge for his death, of whom I haue receyued*

my

my life. Could I giue peace to my thoughts, or vnthinke thee the cause of my disaster, I would not seeke to bereaue thee of thy life, with the hazard of mine owne. But finding this not onely difficult, but impossible, pardon mee if I request thee to meet mee single, at eight of the clocke after Supper, at the West end of the Common Vineyard, where I will attend thee with a couple of Rapiers, the choyce whereof shall bee thine, and the refusall mine: or if thou wilt make vse of a Second, he shall not depart without meeting one to exchange a thrust or two with him.

ALCASERO.

Whiles the *Barron* of *Carpi* is triumphing to see how he hath bleared the eyes of his Indges, and so freed himselfe from the feares and danger of death, behold, *Plantinus* findes him out, and deliuers him *Alcasero* his Challenge. He takes it, and with a variable countenance reades it, whereat he finds a reluctation and combate, not onely in his thoughts, but his Conscience, whether hee should accept, or refuse it. His *Honour* bids him doe the first; but his Conscience wills him to performe the second: it were better to bee borne a Clowne, then a Coward. Besides, if hee should refuse to fight with *Alcasero*, he vpon the matter makes himselfe guiltie of the *Captaine* his fathers death. Hee knowes he hath an vniust cause in hand, but he preferres his *Honour* before his *Life*, when setting a good face vpon his resolution, hee addresseth himselfe to *Plantinus* thus:

Sir, I presume you know this businesse: for I take you to be *Alcasero's* Second. Hee hath (replyed *Plantinus*) done me the honour to make choyce of me, in stead of a more worthy. Well (quoth the *Barron* of

Carpi) tell thy maſter from me, That although I haue not deſerued his malice, yet that I accept his Challenge, and will performe it, onely I muſt fight ſingle, becauſe I am at preſent vnprouided of a Second. *Plantinus* (as full of Valour as Fidelitie) prayes him, that hee may not ſee his hopes and deſires fruſtrated, but that hee may inioy part of the feaſt. But *Carpi* giues him this anſwere, which hee bids him take for his laſt reſolution: That he will hazard himſelfe, but not his friend. So *Plantinus* returnes with ioy to his Maſter, and diſcontent to himſelfe: when nothing prouing of power, to quench the fire of theſe two *Gentlemens* courage and reuenge, they meete at the time and place appoynted. *Carpi* fights with paſſion and vehemency; *Alcaſero* with iudgement and diſcretion. *Carpi* lookes red and fiery with choller; and *Alcaſero*, pale and gaſtly, not for feare of his cauſe, but for the remembrance of his ſorrowes: and to conclude and ſhut vp this combate in the iſſue thereof, *Iuſtice* is not now pleaſed to ſhewe the effects of her power and influence; nor *God* that of his Iuſtice, onely it is reſerued for another time, & for a more ſhamefull manner: ſo *Carpi* hath the beſt of the day, for hee is onely hurt in his right hand, and ſcarred ouer both his lippes, as if the prouidence and pleaſure of *God* had ordained, that that hand which committed the murther, and that mouth which denyed it, ſhould be purpoſely puniſhed, and no part elſe. As for *Alcaſero*, he had fiue ſeuerall wounds, whereof one being thorow the body, made *Carpi* beleeue it was mortall, and the rather, for that hee fell therewith ſpeechleſſe to the ground: ſo leauing him groueling & weltring in his blood, he departs, reſting very confident, that hee

hee was at his very laſt gaſpe of life, and poynt of death. But *Carpi* his *Chirurgeon* (being more humane and charitable then his maſter) leapes ouer the next hedge, and comes to his aſſiſtance: He leanes him againſt a banke, bindes vp his wounds, and wraps him in his cloake, and ſo runnes to a Litter, which he ſaw neere him, and prayes the Lady that was in it, that ſhe would vouchſafe to take in *Don Alcaſero*, who was there extremely and dangerouſly wounded: and this did *Carpi* his *Chirurgeon* performe, in the abſence of *Alcaſero's* owne *Chirurgeon*, who out of ſome diſtaſte or forgetfulneſſe, came not at the houre and place aſſigned according to his promiſe. It was the Lady *Marguerita Eſperia*, who out of her noble and charitable zeale to wounded *Alcaſero*, preſently deſcended her Litter, commanding her ſeruants to lay him in ſoftly, and to conuey him to his lodging, and ſhee her ſelfe is pleaſed to ſtay in the fields till her ſeruants returne it her. It was a *courteſie*, and a *charitie* worthy of ſo *Honourable* a Lady as her ſelfe: and in regard whereof, I hold it fit, to giue her remembrance and name a place in this Hiſtory. All *Naples*, yea the whole Kingdome rings of this Combate; the *Barron* of *Carpi* and *Alcaſero* are (ioyntly) highly commended and extolled for the ſame; the laſt for his affection and zeale to his dead father; the firſt, for giuing *Alcaſero* his life, when it was in his power and pleaſure to haue taken it from him. But God will not permit *Alcaſero* to dye of theſe wounds, but will rather haue him liue to ſee *Carpi* die before him, though in a farre more ignoble and ſhamefull manner.

As ſoone as *Alcaſero's* wounds are cured, and hee prettie well recouered, he leaues *Naples*, and returnes

to

to *Otranto*, where his ſiſter *Caleſtina* did as much ſhake and tremble, at the impriſonment of the *Baron* of *Carpi*, as ſhee now reioyces at his libertie; eſpecially, ſith ſhee is aſſured, that he hath no way accuſed her, nor vſed her name for the death and murther of her father, which indeed makes her farre more pleaſant and merry then before, and within ſixe moneths after marries with *Seignior Alonſo Loudouici*, whom ſhee euer from her youth had loued and affected, and with whom ſhee liues in great pleaſure, ſtate, and pompe; and no leſſe doth her brother *Alcaſero*, who for the courteſie which *Dona Margarita Eſperia* ſhewed him, when hee was ſo dangerouſly wounded, in requitall thereof doth now marry the faire *Beatina*, her onely daughter, with whom he liues in the higheſt content and felicitie, as any *Gentleman* of *Italy*, or of the whole world, can either deſire or wiſh.

But this *Sunne-ſhine* of *Carpi's* proſperitie, and *Caleſtina's* happineſſe and glory ſhall not laſt long: for there is a ſtorme breaking foorth, which threatneth no leſſe then the vtter ruine, as well of their fortunes as liues. Where men cannot, God will both detect and puniſh murthers; yea, by ſuch ſecret meanes and inſtruments, as we leaſt ſuſpect or imagine. They are infallible *Maximes*, that wee are neuer leſſe ſecured, then when wee thinke our ſelues ſecure; nor neerer danger, then when we eſteeme our ſelues fartheſt from it. And if any bee ſo incredulous, or as I may ſay, ſo irreligious, as not to beleeue it, haue they but a little patience, and they ſhall inſtantly ſee it verified and made good in the *Barron* of *Carpi*, and the Lady *Caleſtina*, who thinking themſelues now ſafe and free from all aduerſe fortunes, and fatall accidents whatſoeuer,

soeuer, and enioying all those contents and pleasures, which their hearts could either desire, or wish to enioy, or which the world could prostitute or present them, they in a moment shall bee bereaued of their delights and glory, and enforced to end their dayes on a base scaffold with much shame, infamy, and misery. The manner is thus:

God many times beyond our hopes, and expectations, doth square out the rule of his Iustice according to that of his will: all men are to bee accountable to him for their actions, but he to none for his decrees and resolutions: it is in him to order, in vs to obey; yea, many times hee repriues vs, but yet with no intent to pardon vs. Curiosity in matters of Faith and Religion, prooues not onely folly, but impietie: for as we are men, we must looke vp to *God*, but as we are *Christians*, wee must not looke beyond him. Hee oftentimes makes great offenders accuse themselues for want of others to accuse them; and when he pleaseth, hee will punish one sinne by another, the which we shal now see verified in *Lorenzo* the *Baron* of *Carpi* his Laquay; that wretched and bloody *Lorenzo*, who as wee haue formerly heard, assisted this his master to murther Captaine *Beneuente* and *Fiamento*, neere *Alpiata*; who euer since being countenanced and authorized by his Masters fauour, in respect of this his foule fact, wherein his bloody and murtherous hand was deeply and ioyntly embrewed with him, hee from that time becomes so debaush'd and dissolute in his Seruice, as he spends all that possible hee can procure or get; yea, and runnes likewise extreamely in debt, not onely with all his friends, but also with all those whom he knowes will trust him: so as his wants be-

ing extreamely vrgent, and enforced to see himselfe reduced to a miserable indigence and pouertie. Hee being one day sent by the *Baron* his Master to the *Senate* house, with a Letter to his Councellor, hee there in the throng and crowd of people, cut a purse from a *Gentlewomans* side, wherin was some fiue and twentie Ducketons in gold, was taken with the maner, and apprehended, and imprisoned for the fact, and the next morne his Processe was made, he found guiltie, and condemned to be hanged: So he is dealt withall by a couple of Fryers in prison, who prepare his soule for *Heauen:* He sees the foulenesse of his former life, and repents it. The *Baron* of *Carpi* his Master, no sooner vnderstands this newes, but hee shakes and trembles, fearing least this his Laquay should reueale the murther of the Captaine and his man: whereupon hee resolueth to flye; but considering againe, that if his Laquay accuse him not, his very flight will proclaime and make him guiltie: hee stayes, and as hee thinkes, resolues of a better course: Hee goes to the prison, and deales with his Laquay to be secret in the businesse he wots of; protesting and promising him, that in consideration thereof, hee will inrich his mother, and brothers. *Lorenzo* tels him, that he need not feare: for as he hath liued, so he will die his faithfull seruant: But wee shall see him haue more grace, then to keepe so graceless a promise. *Carpi* flattering himselfe with the fidelitie and affection of his Laquay, resolues to stay in the Citie: but he shall shortly repent his confidence. He was formerly betrayed by *Fiesco*, which mee thinkes should haue made him more cautious and wise, and not so simple to entrust and repose his life on the incertaine mercy of *Lorenzo's* tongue:

but

but *Gods* reuenge drawes neere him, and consequently he neere his end; for hee neither can nor shall auoyd the iudgement of *Heauen*.

Lorenzo on the gallowes, will not charge his soule with this foule & execrable sin of murther: but *Grace* now operating with his soule, as much as formerly Sathan did with his heart, he confesseth, that he and the Barron of *Carpi* his Master, together with the Knight *Monte-leone*, and his Laquay *Anselmo* murthered the Captaine *Benevente*, and his man *Fiamento*, and threw them into the Quarry, the which hee takes to his death is true: and so vsing some *Christian-like* speeches of repentance and sorrow, he is hanged.

Lorenzo is no sooner turned ouer, but the *Criminall Iudges*, aduertised of his speeches deliuered at his death, they command the Baron of *Carpi* his lodging to bee beleagred, where he is found in his Study, and so apprehended, & committed prisoner, where feare makes him looke pale; so as the Peacockes plumes both of his pride & courage strike saile. He is againe put to the Rack, and now the second time he reueales this foule and bloody murther, and in euery poynt acknowledgeth *Lorenzoes* accusation of him to bee true: So he is condemned, first to haue his right hand cut off, and then his head, notwithstanding that many great friends of his sue to the *Vicroy* for his pardon. The night before hee was to dye the next morne, one of his Iudges was sent to him to prison, to perswade him to discouer all his complices in that murther, besides *Monte-leone* and his Laquay *Anselmo*; yea, there are likewise some Diuines present, who with many religious exhortations perswade him to it: So *Grace* preuailes with Nature, and *Righteousnes* with Impiety

and sinne in him; that he is now no longer himselfe, for contrition and repentance hath reformed him: he will rather disrespect *Celestina*, then displease God: wherupon he affirmes, that she and her deceased sister *Fidelia*, drew him and *Monte-leone* to murther their father, and his man *Fiamento*; and that if it had not bin for their allurements and requests, they had neuer attempted either the beginning or end of so bloody a businesse: and thus making himselfe ready for *Heauen*, and grieuing at nothing on *Earth*, but at the remembrance of his foule fact, hee in the sight of many thousand people, doth now lose his head.

This *Tragedy* is no sooner acted and finished in *Naples*, but the Iudges of this Citie send away poast to those of *Otranto*, to seize on the Lady *Celestina* (who in the absence of her husband for the most part liued there:) A Lady whom I could pity for her youth and beautie, did not the foulenesse of her fact so foulely disparage and blemish it. Shee is that instant at a *Noblemans* house, at the solemnity of his daughters marriage, where shee is apprehended, imprisoned, and accused to be the author & plotter of the *Captain* her fathers death; neither can her teares or prayers exempt her from this affliction and misery. She was once of opinion to deny it, but vnderstanding that the *Baron* of *Carpi* and his Laquay *Lorenzo* were already executed for the same in *Naples*, she with a world of teares freely confesseth it, and confirmes as much as *Carpi* affirmed: wherupon in expiation of this her inhumane *Paracide*, she is condemned to haue her head cut off, her body burnt, and her ashes throwen into the ayre: for a milder death, and a lesse punishment the Lord will not (out of his Iustice) inflict vpon her, for this her

her horrible crime, and barbarous cruelty committed on the person of her owne father, or at least seducing and occasioning it to bee committed on him; and it is not in her husbands possible power to exempt or free her hereof. Being sent backe that night to prison, she passeth it ouer (or in very truth the greatest part thereof) in prayer, still grieuing for her sinnes, & mourning for this her bloody offence and crime; and the next morne being brought to her execution, when shee ascended the scaffold, she was very humble, sorrowfull, and repentant, and with many showers of teares requested her brother *Alcastro* and all her kinsfolkes to forgiue her, for occasioning and consenting to her fathers death, and generally all the world to pray for her; when her sighs and teares so sorrowfully interrupted, and silenced her tongue, as she recommending her soule into the hands of her *Redeemer*, whom shee had so heynously offended, shee with great humilitie and contrition, kneeling on her knees, and lifting vp her eyes and hands towards heauen, the Executioner with his sword, made a double diuorce betwixt her head and her body, her body and her soule; and then the fire (as if incensed at so fiery a spirit) consumed her to ashes, and her ashes were thrown into the ayre, to teach her, and all the world by her example, that so inhumane and bloody a daughter, deserued not either to tread on the face of this Earth, or to breathe this ayre of life.

Shee was lamented of all who either knew or saw her, not that shee should die, but that shee should first deserue, then suffer so shamefull & wretched a death: and yet shee was farre-happier then her sister *Fidelia*, for shee despaired, and this confidently hoped for re-

and sinne in him; that he is now no longer himselfe, for contrition and repentance hath reformed him: he will rather disrespect *Celestina*, then displease God: wherupon he affirmes, that she and her deceased sister *Fidelia*, drew him and *Monte-leone* to murther their father, and his man *Fiamento*, and that if it had not bin for their allurements and requests, they had neuer attempted either the beginning or end of so bloody a businesse: and thus making himselfe ready for *Heauen*, and gricuing at nothing on *Earth*, but at the remembrance of his foule fact, hee in the sight of many thousand people, doth now lose his head.

This *Tragedy* is no sooner acted and finished in *Naples*, but the Iudges of this Citie send away poast to those of *Otranto*, to seize on the Lady *Celestina* (who in the absence of her husband for the most part liued there:) A Lady whom I could pity for her youth and beautie, did not the foulenesse of her fact so foulely disparage and blemish it. Shee is that instant at a *Noblemans* house, at the solemnity of his daughters marriage, where shee is apprehended, imprisoned, and accused to be the author & plotter of the *Captain* her fathers death; neither can her teares or prayers exempt her from this affliction and misery. She was once of opinion to deny it, but vnderstanding that the *Baron* of *Carpi* and his Laquay *Lorenzo* were already executed for the same in *Naples*, she with a world of teares freely confesseth it, and confirmes as much as *Carpi* affirmed: wherupon in expiation of this her inhumane *Paracide*, she is condemned to haue her head cut off, her body burnt, and her ashes throwen into the ayre: for a milder death, and a lesse punishment the Lord will not (out of his Iustice) inflict vpon her, for this her

her horrible crime, and barbarous cruelty committed on the person of her owne father, or at least seducing and occasioning it to bee committed on him; and it is not in her husbands possible power to exempt or free her hereof. Being sent backe that night to prison, she passeth it ouer (or in very truth the greatest part thereof) in prayer, still grieuing for her sinnes, & mourning for this her bloody offence and crime; and the next morne being brought to her execution, when shee ascended the scaffold, she was very humble, sorrowfull, and repentant, and with many showers of teares requested her brother *Alcastro* and all her kinsfolkes to forgiue her, for occasioning and consenting to her fathers death, and generally all the world to pray for her; when her sighs and teares so sorrowfully interrupted, and silenced her tongue, as she recommending her soule into the hands of her *Redeemer*, whom shee had so heynously offended, shee with great humilitie and contrition, kneeling on her knees, and lifting vp her eyes and hands towards heauen, the Executioner with his sword, made a double diuorce betwixt her head and her body, her body and her soule; and then the fire (as if incensed at so fiery a spirit) consumed her to ashes, and her ashes were thrown into the ayre, to teach her, and all the world by her example, that so inhumane and bloody a daughter, deserued not either to tread on the face of this Earth, or to breathe this ayre of life.

Shee was lamented of all who either knew or saw her, not that shee should die, but that shee should first deserue, then suffer so shamefull & wretched a death: and yet shee was farre happier then her sister *Fidelia*, for shee despaired, and this confidently hoped for re-

miſſion and ſaluation. Thus albeit this wretched and execrable yong *Gentlewoman* liued impiouſly, yet ſhe dyed *Chriſtianly:* wherfore let vs thinke on that with deteſtation, and on this with charity. And here we ſee how ſeuerely the murther of Captaine *Benevente* was by *Gods* iuſt reuenge puniſhed, not onely in his two daughters, who plotted it, but alſo in the two Noblemen and their two Laquayes, who acted it. Such attempts and crimes deſerue ſuch ends and punſhments, and infallibly find them. The only way therefore for *Chriſtians* to auoid the one, and contemne the other, is with ſanctified hearts, and vnpolluted hands ſtill to pray vnto *God* for his *Grace*, continually to affect *praier*, and inceſſantly to practiſe *pietie* in our thoughts, and *godlines* in our reſolutions and actions, the which if we be carefull and conſcionable to performe, *God* will then ſhroud vs vnder the wings of his fauor, and ſo preſerue and protect vs with his mercy and prouidence, as we ſhall haue no cauſe to feare either *Hell*, or *Sathan*.

THE

THE TRIVMPHS OF GODS REVENGE A-gainst the crying and execrable *Sinne of Murther.*

Historie X V.

Maurice *like a bloody villaine, and damnable sonne, throwes his Mother* Christina *into a Well, and drownes her: the same hand and arme of his wherewith he did it, rots away from his body; and being discrased of his wits in Prison, he there confesseth this foule and inhumane murther, for the which he is hanged.*

IF wee did not wilfully make our selues miserable, *God* is so indulgent and mercifull to vs, as he would make vs more happie; but when with high and presumptuous hands we violate the Lawes of *Nature* and *Grace*, of *Earth* and *Heauen*, in murthering through Enuie those, whom through *Dutie* and affection wee are bound to obey, honour, cherish and preserue: then it is no maruell, because we first forsooke God, that he after abandoneth vs to our selues, and sins, and to the fruits thereof, Calamity, Misery, Infamy and Perdition; and that we may see humane cruelty to be iustly met with and punished by Gods vpright and diuine Iustice,

Iuſtice, Loe heere in this inſuing Hiſtory we ſhall ſee a wretched ſonne kill his harmeleſſe and deere mother. A very fearefull and lamentable *Parracyde*, a moſt cruell and execrable fact, for the which we ſhall ſee him rewarded with condeigne puniſhment, and with a ſharpe and infamous death; although not halfe ſo deplorable as deſerued. It is a bitter and bloody *Hiſtory*, the relation and remembrance wherof in the moſt barbarous and flinty hearts is capeable, not only to ingender compaſſion, but compunction: yea, not onely contrition, but teares, at leaſt if wee haue any place left in vs for *Pitty*, or roome for *Pietie*; the which if we haue, doubtleſſe the end of our reading will not onely bleſſe, but crowne the beginning, and the beginning the end thereof.

vpon Heidworth

VPon the North-eaſt ſide of the Lake *Leman*, vulgarly knowne and called the Lake of *Geneua*, (becauſe it payes its full tribute, and make its chiefeſt *Rendezvous* before that City, whereof it inuironeth at leaſt one third part.) There ſtands a prettie ſmall and ſtrong towne, diſtant a little dayes iourney from it, termed *Morges*, which properly belongs to the iuriſdiction of *Berne*, one of the chiefeſt *Cantons* of that warlike people and Country of *Swiſſerland*, wherein of verie late yeares, and recent memory, there dwelt a rich and honeſt Burger or Burgemaſter (for of Gentrie thoſe parts and people are not, becauſe they will not be capeable) named *Martin Halſenorſe*, who by his wife *Chriſtina Snuytſaren*, had one onely child, a ſonne named *Maurice Halſenorſe*, now of ſome foureteene yeare old; whoſe father although he were by profeſſion a ſouldier, and inrolled a Lieutenant,

nant, to one of thoſe *Auxilary* Bands of that Country which are in pay to the *French King*; yet neuertheleſſe his chiefeſt ambition and care was, to make this ſonne of his a ſcholler, becauſe the Ignorance and illiterature of his owne age, made him to repent it in himſelfe, and therefore to prouide a remedy thereof in his ſonnes youth, ſith he now knew and ſawe, that a man without learning, was either as a body without a ſoule, or a ſoule without knowledge and reaſon; which are her chiefeſt vertue, and moſt ſacred *Ornaments* and *Excellencies:* So he brings him vp to their owne *Grammar* Schoole in *Morges*, where in ſome three or foure yeares his affection and care to ſtudie, makes him ſo good a *Proficient*, as he becomes not onely skilfull, but perfect therein, and almoſt as capeable to teach his Schoole-maſter, as hee was to inſtruct him: yea, and to adde the better *Grace*, to the *Grace* of that *Art*, he was of ſo milde and ſo moddeſt a carriage, and the bloſſomes of his youth, were ſo ſweetly watred with the *Heauenly* dew of *Vertue* and *Piety*, as if his manners and himſelfe were wholy compoſed thereof; ſo that for *Learning* and *Goodneſſe*, hee was, and was iuſtly reputed, not onely the *Mirrour*, but the *Phœnix* of all the youth of *Morges*; and as hee eſteemed himſelfe happy in his Parents, ſo they reciprocally hold themſelues, not onely happie, but bleſſed in this their ſonne; but becauſe the inherent coruption of our Nature, and the peruerſneſſe and multiplicity of our ſinnes are ſuch, as they cannot promiſe vs any true ioy, much leſſe aſſured and permanent felicity: ſo the Sunne-ſhine of this their Temporary content, equally deuided in thirds betwixt the Father, Mother and Sonne, will ſhortly

receiue a great eccliplſe, and a fatall diſaſter, which will be to them by ſo much the more bitter, and mournefull, ſith both the cauſe and effects thereof, were of each of them vnthought of, of them all vnexpected.

For *God* in his ſacred decree and prouidence, ſeeing *Martin Halſenorſe* the Father, his ſtrength arriued to its full *Meridian* and hight, and his dayes to their full number and periode: Hee, as he ſate at dinner iocund and merry with his wife and ſonne, is ſodainely taken with a deadly ſwoone, which preſently depriues his body of this life, and ſends his ſoule to enioy the ſweet felicity and ſacred ioy and immortality of the life to come: A *Document* which may teach vs not to rely vpon the rotten priuiledges and ſtrength of youth, but ſo to prepare our liues, that death at all places, and in all times, may ſtill finde vs armed and ready to encounter it: A *Document* which may teach vs with the erected eyes, as well of our faith, as body, ſo to looke from *Earth* to *Heauen*, that our ſoules be not onely ready, but willing to forſake this ſtinking Tabernacle and priſon of our mortality, to flie and be admitted into *Heauen*, that *Heauenly Ieruſalem*, and celeſtiall City, where they may enioy the bleſſed *Communion* of the *Saints*, and the greateſt bleſſings of al ioyes, & the moſt ſoueraigne ioy of all bleſſings, then to ſee our *Creator* and *Sauiour*, *God* the Father, and *Chriſt Ieſus* his Sonne face to face, wherin indeed all the ioyes and bleſſings of our ſoules, are compriſed and included:

The death of *Halſenorſe* the father, is not only the *Argument*, but the cauſe of his widdow *Chriſtina's* griefe, of his ſonne *Maurice's* ſorrow, of her teares

and

and grones of his ſighes & afflictions; yea, and not to derogate from the Truth, I may ſteppe a degree farther and ſay, that this his death is a fatall herauld, and mournefull harbinger which portends and prepares both of them, many diſaſterous calamities, and wofull miſeries, the which in a manner are almoſt ready to ſurpriſe and befall them.

This ſorrowfull widdow being thus depriued of her deere Husband, who was both her comfort and her ioy, her ſtay and her Protector, her Head and her glory; although he left her a good Eſtate, ſufficient enough to warrant her againſt the feare of pouerty, and to ſecure himſelfe againſt the apprehenſion of worldly Indigence; and wherewithall to maintaine both her ſelfe and her ſonne, with ſomewhat more then an indifferent competency: yet ſhee ſaw her friends forſake her, and her Husbands familiar acquaintance abandone her, as if their friendſhip died with him, and that their remembrance of him was wholy raked vp, and buried in the duſt of his graue. A moſt ingratefull diſeaſe and iniquity of our time, rather to be pitied then cured, and reprooued, then reformed, ſo fading and inconſtant are the vnfriendly friendſhips of the world, who for the moſt part are grounded on profit, not on Honor, on auarice, not on Vertue, on their owne gold, not on the want of their Chriſtian neighbours and bretheren: *But enough of this, and againe to our Hiſtory.*

Now if *Chriſtina* (for onely by that name I will hencefoorth intitle her) haue any comfort or conſolation left her, to ſweeten the bitterneſſe of her Husbands death, it is onely to ſee him ſuruiue and liue in her ſonne *Maurice*, in whoſe vertues and yeares, her

hopes likewiſe begin againe to bud foorth and flouriſh; when remembring what an earneſt care and deſire her husband had to ſee him a Scholler, as ſhee inherites his goods, ſo ſhee will aſſume and inherite that reſolution of his: and although ſhe loue her ſonnes ſight, and affect his preſence tenderly and dearly, yet ſhe can giue no peace to her thoughts, nor take any truce of her reſolutions, till ſhe ſend him from *Morges* to the *Vniuerſitie* of *Loſanna*, ſome three leagues diſtant thence, there to perfect his Studies and learning, the ſeedes whereof already ſo hopefully bloſſomed foorth, and fructified in him. To which end, her deepeſt affection and care hauing hearkened out one *Deodatus Vareſius*, a Bachelor of *Diuinitie* of that *Vniuerſitie*, whom Fame (though indeed moſt falſely) had informed her to be an expert *Scholler*, and an excellent *Chriſtian*, ſhee agrees with him; when allowing her ſonne an honeſt exhibition, and furniſhing him with Bookes, a Gowne, and all other neceſſaries, ſhe ſends him away to *Loſanna*, charging him at his departure to bee carefull of his Learning, carriage, and actions; and aboue all, to make pietie and godlineſſe in his life and conuerſation, the *Regent* of all his ſtudies, when with teares of naturall affection, they take leaue each of other.

Maurice being arriued at *Loſanna*, findes out his Tutor *Vareſius*, who receiues and welcomes this his Pupill courteouſly and kindly: but *alas*, the hopes of *Chriſtina* the mother, are extreamely deceiued in the vertues of *Vareſius*; becauſe his *Vices* will inſtantly deceiue both the merites and expectation of her *Sonne*, or rather change nature and qualities in him, and thereby ſhortly make him as vicious in *Loſanna*,

as

as formerly hee was vertuous in *Morges*: for I write with griefe and pitie, that to define the truth aright, it was difficult to ſay, whether he were more learned, or deboſhed, a more perfect Scholler, or prophane *Chriſtian*: for albeit the dignitie of his Batchelorſhip of *Theologie*, did hide many of his diſſolute prankes, and obſceane imperfections, yet his exhorbitant deportment and induſtry could not ſo cloſſely ouerualle and obſcure them, but his intemperate affection to drinking, and beaſtly inclination to drunkenneſſe, began now to become obuious and apparant to the eyes and Heads of his *Colledge*, yea to the whole *Vniuerſitie*: A moſt pernitious and ſwiniſh *Vice*, indeede too too much incident and ſubiect to theſe people the *Swiſſes*; but if it had been immured and confined within theſe Rockes and Mountaines of *Germany*, it had prooued not only a happineſſe, but a bleſſing to the other Weſterne part of the *Chriſtian* world, where it ſpreads its infection like an vncontrouleable and incurable *Gangreene*, yea like a moſt contagious and fatall peſtilence: ſo as in *Vareſius* there was nothing more incongruous and different, then his Doctrine and his life, his profeſſion and conuerſation, his *Theorie*, and his *Practice*, his knowledge and his will. But if the head-ſprings and fountaines bee corrupted with this vice and drunkenneſſe, no maruell if the Riuers and Streames of *Common-weales* bee infected and poyſoned therewith; yea, if it bee not debarred, but haue admittance and reſidence in the *Schooles* and *Claſſes* of *Vniuerſities*, from which Nurſes and Gardens of the Muſes, both the *Church* and *Eſtate* fetch their chiefeſt Ornaments and Members: how can we expect to ſee it rooted out from the more illiterate

Commons, whoſe groſſe ignorance makes them farre more capable to learne *Vice*, then *Vertue*; or rather *Vice*, and not *Vertue*; ſith there is no ſhorter nor truer Art to learne it, then of their *Art Maſters*, becauſe the example and preſident of ill doing in our Teachers and Superiors, doth not onely plant, but ingraffe and root it; not onely priuiledge, but as it were, authoriſe it in vs, ſtill with a fatall impetuoſitie, with a dangerous violence, and pernitious euent and iſſue: for if remedies be not to be found in learned *Phiſicions*, it is then in vaine to ſeeke them in the rude and vnlearned people; and if the *Preceptor* himſelfe bee not ſanctified, it is rather to bee feared then doubted, that his *Diſciple* will not. This (yea this) is a moſt mournefull and fatall rocke, whereon diuers vertuous and religious Parents, haue euen wept themſelues to death, to ſee their children ſuffer ſhipwracke: yea, this beaſtly and brutiſh ſinne of Drunkenneſſe, is ſtill the Deuils *Vſher* and *Pander* to all other ſinnes; and therefore how cautious and carefull ought the Heads of *Schooles* & *Vniuerſities* be, to expell and root it out from themſelues, and to hate & deteſt it in others, ſith in the remiſſe winking thereat, I may (with as much truth as ſaftie) affirm, that toleration, is confirmation; & conniuency, cruelty; as we ſhall not go far to ſee it made good, and verified in this enſuing mournful Hiſtory; the which in exacting Inke from my Pen, doth likewiſe command blood from my heart, and teares from mine eyes, to anatomize and vnfold it.

Difficultly hath *Maurice* been three moneths in *Loſanna* with *Vareſius*, but his vertues are ecclipſed and drowned in vice; yea, he not onely thinks, but holds it a vertue, to make himſelfe culpable and guiltie of this

this his Tutors *Vice* of *Drunkennеſſe*, wherein within leſſe then three moneths, hee prooues ſo expert, or indeed ſo execrable a *Scholler* in this beaſtly Art, as both day and night, he makes it not onely his practiſe, but his delight; & not onely his delight, but his glory. Hee who before was ſo temperate in his drinke and conuerſation in *Morges*, as for the moſt part he wholly dranke water, not wine; now hee is is ſo viciouſly metamorphoſed in *Loſanna*, as contrariwiſe, he onely drinkes wine, and no water; yea, and which is lamentable to remember, and deplorable to obſerue in this young *Scholler*, he drinks (or to write truer, deuoures it) ſo exceſſiuely, as his Cups are become his Bookes; his carrowſing, his learning; the Tauerne, his Studie; and Drunkenneſſe the only Art he profeſſeth: which filthy and infectious diſeaſe, ſpreading from the *Preceptor* to the *Pupill*, from old *Vareſius* to young *Maurice*, hath ſo ſurpriſed the one, and ſeiz'd on the other, as it threatens the diſparagement of the firſt his reputation, and the ſhipwracke of the ſeconds fortunes, and it may be of his life.

Now *Vareſius*, who will not bee aſhamed to pitie this beaſtly *Vice* in himſelfe, doth yet pitie it with ſhame to behold it in his Scholler *Maurice*, and yet hath neither the *Grace* to reforme it in himſelfe, nor the will or power to reprooue it in him; but inſtead of ſtopping and preuenting, doth in all things giue way to the current and torrent of this ſwiniſh ſinne, which ineuitably drawes after it theſe threefold diſeaſes and miſeries: The poyſon of our bodies, the conſumption of our purſes, and the moath and Canker of our reputations; or if you will theſe three not farre different from the three former: The bane of

our

our wits, the enemy of our health and life, and the conſumer of our Eſtates and friends: And within the compaſſe of one whole yeare, to all thoſe diſeaſes and miſeries doth the drunkenneſſe of our deboſhed young Scholler *Maurice* ſubiect and reduce him; ſo as it being the nature of ſinne (not checked and vanquiſhed with repentance) rather to grow then wither, to flouriſh then fade or decay with our age: the longer *Maurice* liued in *Loſanna*, the deeper roote this beaſtly vice of Drunkenneſſe tooke in him, & he the deerer affection to it; ſo as that competent exhibition which his mother yearely allowed him, became incomputable with this his exceſſiue podigality and intemperancy: Yea, his extreame ſuperfluity in this kinde, was without intermiſſion ſo frequent, as three quarters of his yeares penſion could not diſcharge one of his expences and debts, ſo ſtrong a habit (conuerted now to a ſecond Nature) had this bewitching beaſtly ſinne of drunkenneſſe exacted and gotten of him, as if this were his felicity, and that hee onely triumphed to become a ſlaue to this his ſlauiſh appetite and ſwyniſh profeſſion, which to ſupport and maintaine, hee not onely feeds, but ſurfets his mother with variety of ſubtill and inſinuating letters, thereby to draw diuers ſummes of monies from her, as indeed hee doth; ſome vnder pretext of his neceſſitie to buy new bookes, which hee affirmed he wanted; others vnder pretence of his weakeneſſe and ſikneſſe, and ſuch like colourable excuſes: which vnthriftie prodigality of his, doth as faſt emptie her purſe and ſtore, as her induſtrious frugality can poſſibly fill them, whereof hauing all the reaſons of the world to become ſencible; ſhee at laſt making

making her iudgement conſult with her affection, beginnes now to feare, that her ſonne was become leſſe vertuous, and more deboſhed then ſhe hoped of, and that theſe his letters and petitions for money, were but onely trickes to deceiue the hopes, and betray the confidence ſhe repoſed in his vertuous carriage, and godly inclination; whereof being in fine informed and certified, from ſuch *Students* and *Burghers* of *Loſanna*, whom ſhee had ſet as *Sentenells*, to haue *Argus*, yea *Lynceus* eyes ouer his actions and deportments, ſhe at laſt with few thanks to his *Tutor Vareſius*, many complaints and exclamations to her ſonne, and inexpreſſable griefe and ſorrow to her ſelfe, calles and commands him home from *Loſanna* to *Morges*, where with much bitterneſſe and ſecrecy, ſhee taxeth and rates him for his drunkenneſſe and prodigalitie, in that he had vainely ſpent in one yeare, more then either his father and her ſelfe could collect or gather vp in many.

But ſee the lewd ſubtiltie, and wretched deceitfulneſſe of this diſſolute ſonne towards this his deare and tender mother: for then and there ſeaſoning his ſpeeches with vertue, and his behauiour with obedience and pietie, he modeſtly ſeemes not onely to tax her credulitie, conceiued againſt the candeur and integritie of his actions; but alſo with a kind of Tacite choller, to maligne and traduce thoſe who iniuſtly and falſly had caſt ſo foule an aſperſion on his vertues and innocency; and the better to make thoſe his ſpeeches, and this his *Apologie* and *Iuſtification* paſſe current with his mother, his diſcretion now preſcribes ſo fayre a Law to his *Vanitie*, and his reaſon to his intemperate and irregular deſires, as to the eye of the

world, and to her more curious and obſeruant iudgement, hee ſeemes to be the very picture and Statue of *Vertue*, although *God* and his ſoule ſoule and Conſcience well knowes, that he is the true, eſſentiall, and reall *Image* of *Vice*: and the better to cloke and oueruaile this his diſſimulation from the eyes of God and his mother, although he continue to take his Cuppes by night, yet in *Morges*, and eſpecially in his mothers houſe and ſight, he caſts them off by day; and the better, and more firmely to reintegrate himſelfe into her approbation and fauour, hee mornings and euenings is ſeene at his prayers, and ſpends the greateſt part of his time in hearing and frequenting of *Sermons*, the which affoords ſuch ſweet content to her conceits and thoughts, as ſhee repents herſelfe of her vnkindneſſe towards him, and not onely acquits him of his drunkenneſſe, prodigalitie, and diſſoluteneſſe, but alſo accuſeth his accuſers, who ſhee now as much condemnes for *Enuy* and *Malice* towards her *Sonne*, as ſhee highly (and as ſhe thinks iuſtly) applauds him for his religious pietie towards *God*.

But ſith Hypocriſie is worſe then Prophaneneſſe, as making vs rather Deuils then Saints; or indeed not Saints, but Deuils; and that no ſacrifice is ſo odious, nor obiect ſo hatefull to *God*, as he who denies and diſſembleth it in his lookes, and yet profeſſeth and practiſeth it in his heart and ſoule: ſo we ſhall ſee to our griefe, and this wretched *Hypocrite* finde to his miſery, that thinking to deceiue *God*, he ſhall in the end deceiue himſelfe; and in attempting to betray his mother through his falſe *Vertue*, his true *Vice* will at laſt betray him, and make him as miſerable, as hee flattereth himſelfe it will make him fortunate.

Now

Now the better to root and confirme this opinion of his temperancy in his mothers conceits and mind, and ſo the more ſecretly to ouerſuaile his exceſſiue affection and addiction to *Drunkenneſſe*, he vnder the pretence of ſome neceſſary and profitable occaſions, gets leaue of her, ſomtimes to ride ouer to *Berne*, *Soleure*, *Fribourg*; *Apenſall*, and other capitall townes of the *Cantons*, where he falls afreſh to his cups, and there continually both day & night ſwils his braines, and ſtuffes vp his belly with wine, as if hee tooke no other delight or glory, but to drowne his wit and learning with his money, and his health with both; and yet againe when he returnes to *Morges*, he makes ſuch fayre weather with his mother, and caſts ſo temperate a cloake and colour on his ſpeeches and actions, as if it were impoſſible for him to drinke more then would ſuffice *Nature*, or to deſire more then would meerely quench his thirſt. And thus by his *Hipocriticall* policy, hauing againe wrought himſelfe into his mothers good opinion and fauour, as alſo ſome ſtore of money out of her purſe and coffers; he with a feigned ſhew of *Humilitie* and diſcretion, takes leaue of her, and to perfect his ſtudies and Learning, returnes againe to *Loſanna*; where he is no ſooner arriued, but vpon his new returne, he finds out his olde carrowſing companions, who like ſo many peſtilent Vipers, and contagious Moaths and Caterpillars, are viciouſly, and therefore fatally reſolued, not onely to eate out the bottome of his purſe, but alſo the heart of his happineſſe; and as I may iuſtly tearme it, to deuoure the very ſoule of his felicitie: and with theſe tippling brats of *Bacchus*, doth our lewd and debauſhed *Scholler*, *Maurice*, continually drinke drunke, not

onely forgetting his learning, but himſelfe; and which is worſe, his *God*, hauing neither the power to remember to repent, or grace to pray; nor to remember any thing, except his cups; ſo beaſtly is he inclined, ſo ſwiniſhly and viciouſly is he affected and addicted; and what doth this either prognoſticate, preſage, or promiſe to produce in him, but ineuitable affliction, miſery, and ruine of all ſides?

As the ſhorteſt Errours are beſt: ſo thoſe *Vices* which haue longeſt perſeuerance and predominance in vs, proue ſtill the moſt pernicious and dangerous: It is nothing to cruſh a Serpent in the Egge; but if we permit it to grow to a Serpent, it may then cruſh vs: a plant may be remooued with eaſe; but an old tree difficultly: To fall from ſinne to repentance, is as great a happineſſe, as it is a miſery to fall from repentance to ſinne: and indeed to vſe but one word for the affirmation and confirmation of this truth, there can no greater miſery befall vs, then to thinke our ſelues happy, when (through our ſinnes) wee are miſerable.

Heere in *Loſanna*, *Maurice* eſteemes this his beaſtly ſinne of drunkenneſſe to bee a *Vertue*, not a *Vice* in him; yea, in paying for all ſhots and reckonings in Tauernes, he ſottiſhly and fooliſhly thinks it the ſhorteſt and trueſt way to bee beloued and honoured, (though indeed to be contemned) of all; and therefore without feare or wit, yea without the leaſt ſpark of *Grace*, or ſhaddow of conſideration, his ſtomacke (like the Deuils ſpunge,) and his vnſatiable throate (like a bottomleſſe gulfe) ſo deuoures his wine, and his wine his money, as that which ſhould be the *Argument* of his glory, he makes the cauſe of his ſhame;

and

and his money which ſhould fortifie his reputation, he conuerts and turnes to ruine it. But as pouertie (in a iuſt reuenge of our *Vanitie*) reioyceth to looke on vs, becauſe wee firſt diſdained, either to looke on, or regard it; ſo hee hauing ſpent the fragrant Summer of his folly and prodigality, in waſting the moneyes his mother gaue him, in wine; now the depriuation thereof makes him feele the frosty Winter of that want, which hee can better remember, then remedy, rather repent, then redreſſe. The Fellowes and Studients of his Colledge, looke on him and his Drunkenneſſe, ſome with the eyes of pittie, others with thoſe of ioy, according as their friendſhip, or malice, their Charity or Enuy either conduct their paſſions, or tranſport, and ſteere their reſolutions and inclynations. And for his Tutor *Vareſius*, how can he poſſible ſeeke or reclayme this his Puppill from *Vice* to *Vertue*, when he is ſo wretchedly diſolute, as by the publike vote and voyce of the *Vniuerſitie*, hee himſelfe is already wholy and ſoly relapſed from *Vertue* to *Vice*.

In which reſpect, this vitious young Studient *Maurice*, hauing neither *Vertue* nor *Tutor*, money nor credit, diſcretion nor friend, to ſecure him from the ſhelues of Indigence, or the rockes of Pouerty and Miſery, whereon hee is raſhly and wilfully ruſhing; he like a true deboſhed Scholler, or indeed as a Maſter of Art, in the Art of deboſhedneſſe, firſt ſels away his bookes, then his gowne and cloathes, and next his bed, being deſirous to want any thing but wine; and confidently (though vainely and fooliſhly) aſſured, that if he haue wine enough, that then hee wants nothing. A miſerable conſideration and con-

dition, a wretched Eſtate and reſolution, onely tending and conducing to direfull miſery, and to deplorable pouerty and deſolation.

But to repleniſh his purſe, to repayre his credit, and apparell, and to continue his cuppes & drunkenneſſe, he hath no other hopes or refuge, then againe to caſt himſelfe on the affection and courteſie of his mother whom hee re-viſits with ſeuerall Letters, which are onely ſo many humble inſinuating petitions, againe to draw and wreſt moneyes from her. But he is deceiued in his hopes, and expectation, or at leaſt they deſtinctly and ſeuerally, and his mother ioyntly with them, conſpire to deceiue him. For I write it with griefe, becauſe (by an vncontroulable relation of the truth) ſhee dictates it to my pen with teares; that as well by all thoſe of *Morges*, who came from *Loſanna*, as by all thoſe of *Loſanna* who came to *Morges*, ſhe is moſt certainly & ſorrowfully aduertiſed of her ſonnes deboſhed and diſolute life, of his neglect of Learning, and too frequent affecting and following of drunkenneſſe, of the ſale of his cloathes, bed and bookes; of the erreparable loſſe, both of his time, moneyes and reputation; and withall, how the dregs and fumes of wine, hath metamorphiſed his countenance, and not Graced, but filthily diſgraced it with many fiery Rubies and flaming Carbunkles; as alſo how it hath ſtuffed and bombaſted vp his belly and body; as if the dropſie and he contended who ſhould firſt ſeize each on other, and therefore ſhee being (with a mournefull vnwillingneſſe) enforced, not onely to take notice, but ſorrowfully to reſt aſſured and confident of theſe diſaſterous premiſes, the infallible predictions & *Symptomes* of her Sonnes vtter ruine

ruine and ſubuerſion: Shee peremptorily and abſolutely refuſeth his requeſts, anſwereth his Letters with many ſharpe complaints and bitter exclamations againſt his foule ſinne of Drunkenneſſe, which threatnes no leſſe then the ruine, both of his Reputation, Friends, Learning, Fortune and Life, if not of his Soule.

Maurice, ſeeing himſelfe wholy abandoned of his Mother, he knowes not how to liue, nor yet how to prouide the meanes to maintaine life, which not only ſurpriſeth his thoughts, but amazeth and appaleth his cogitations with feare; yea, he takes this diſcourteſie of hers ſo neere at heart, and withall is ſo extreamely impatient, to ſee himſelfe forſaken of her, whom hee knowes the Lawes of Nature hath commanded to affect and cheriſh: as forgetting himſelfe to be her Sonne, and ſhe his Mother; yea forgetting himſelfe to be a man, and which is more a *Chriſtian*, his wants and *Vices* ſo farre tranſports him beyond the bounds of *Reaſon* and *Religion*, of *Nature* and *Grace*, as hee impiouſly and execrably degenerates from them all and ſecretly vowes to his heart and ſoule, or to ſay truer, to the deuill: (who inchanteth the one, and infecteth and intoxicateth the other) that hee will ſpeedily ſend her into another world in a bloody Coffin, if ſhee will not releeue his wants and maintaine him as her Sonne in this. So Alas here it is, that he firſt giues way to the deuill to take poſſeſſion of his thoughts and heart, and here it is, that he firſt aſſumes bad blood, and ſuggeſts bloody deſignes, againſt the ſafety and life of his deere and innocent Mother. When like a miſerable wretch, and a wretched and impious villaine, his thoughts and ſtudies (like

(like ſo many lynes running to their centre) are now in continuall action and motion, how to finiſh and bring this deplorable Tragicall buſineſſe to an end: yea, the better to feed this his inſatiable bloody appetite, and to quench the quenchleſſe thirſt of his Matracidious reuenge, he forgets all other proiects and affaires, to follow and haſten on this; which (to giue one word for all) takes vp both his ſtudy and his time in *Loſanna*, caſting away his bookes, which would ſeeme to diuert him from it, as if hee courted *Pluto*, not *Apollo*; *Proſerpina*, not *Pallas*; *Errynnis*, not *Vrania*; the *Furies*, not the *Muſes*: and as afflictions ſeldome come alone, but many times (as the waues of the ſea) fall one in the necke of another; ſo to make him rather aduance then retire, in the execution of this his vnnaturall and damnable attempt, his exceſſiue and frequent drunkenneſſe, makes him ſo notoriouſly apparrant to the Heads of the Vniuerſity in generall, and of his owne Colledge in particular, that they giue him his *Conge*, and (without lending any eare to his *Apologie* or Iuſtification) expell him thence. So that being now deſtitute of all friends and meanes, hee is enforced to ſee himſelfe reduced to this point of miſery, that hee muſt either begge or ſtarue; which to preuent (becauſe hee as much diſdaines the firſt, as he is reſoluted to prouide a remedy for the ſecond) he leaues *Loſanna* (where his Vices and debts haue made the ſtones too hot for him) and on foote, goes home to his Mother to *Morges*, hoping that his preſence may preuayle more with her then his abſence; and his tongue make that eaſie, which his pen (in his Letters) found not only difficult but impoſſible.

Be-

Being arriued at *Morges*, his louing & indulgent Mother, receiues him with teares, not of ioy, but of grief, for his Drunkenneſſe hath ſo deformed his face, and body; as at the firſt ſight ſhee dificultly knew him to be her Sonne, and although hee take paines to conceale that beaſtly Vice of his, and ſo to playſter, and varniſh it ouer with a feigned ſhew of repentance and reformation; yet ſhee ſees to her affliction, and obſerues to her miſery, that hee loues his Cups better then his life, and that as ſoone as ſhee once turnes her backe from him, hee falls cloſe to them; and ſo tippleth and carrouſeth from Morning to Night. Three dayes are ſcarce paſt, before hee makes two requeſts to her, the one for new cloathes, the other for money; when, to the end that her wiſdome might ſhine in her affection as well as her affection in her wiſdome, ſhee cheerefully grants him the firſt, but peremptorily dennies him the ſecond, becauſe ſhee well knowes it would be ſo much caſt away on him, ſith he would inſtantly caſt it away on wine, and to write the truth, the grant of his apparell doth not ſo much content him, as the refuſall of her money doth both afflict and inflame him; He is all in choller hereat, and the fumes of Reuenge doe ſo implacably take vp and ſeize on his thoughts, and they on it; as now without the feare of God, or care of his ſoule, hee like a damnable villaine, and an execrable Sonne, ſwaps a bargaine with the Deuill, to deſtroy and make away his Mother: Helliſh reſolutions and infernall conceits, which will not onely ſtrangle thoſe who embrace, but confound thoſe who follow them: His impiety made him formerly aſſume this bloody fact, and now his neceſſity of want of money (in that hee can-

not as it were drowne himselfe in the excesse of Drunkennesse) enforceth him to a resolution to finish it. His faith is so weake towards God, and so strong with the deuill, as he will not retire with Grace, but aduance with impiety, to see as well the end as the beginning of this bloody businesse: Hee consults hereon with his delight, not with his reason, with his will, not with his Conscience; with his heart, not with his Soule. Hee sees hee hath no money, and knowes, or at least beleeues, that his Mother hath enough, and therfore concludes, that if she were once dead, it were impossible, that his life should want any. So these two wretched Councellors, *Couetousnesse* and *Drunkennesse*, (or rather Couetousnesse to maintaine his Drunkennesse) like two infernall fiends and furies, haule him on head-long to perpetrate this bloody and mournefull murther of his deere and tender Mother, the end whereof, will bring him as much true misery and infamy, as the beginning doth flatter and promise him false content and happinesse; his youth hath no regard to her age, and lesse to her Life, neither will hee vouchsafe to remember that hee first receiued his of her: yea, all the blood which flowes in his heart, and streames in his veines and body, cannot any way haue the power to prompe him, that it is deriued and descended from hers. And if *Morges* will not diuert him, *Lysanna* should, if his yeares cannot instruct him, yet his bookes might, and if *Nature* preuailed not with his heart, yet mee thinkes *Grace* should with his Conscience, to represent him the foulenesse of this attempt, and the vnnaturall cruelty thereof, in resoluing to imbrew his diabolicall hands in her innocent blood; or if the influence

fluence of theſe earthly conſiderations could not allay the heate of his malice, or quench the fire of his reuenge towards her, yet mee thinkes looking from prophaneneſſe to piety, from Earth to Heauen; from the time preſent, to the future; from the corruption of his Body, to the immortality of his Soule; from Sinne to Righteouſneſſe, from Reuenge to Religion, and conſequently from ſatan to God, hee ſhould hate this bloody deſigne and proiect of his as much as now he loues it, and ſeeke the preſeruation of his Mother, with as much obedience and affection, as now he contriues and purſues her vntimely end with impiety and deteſtation. But his Vices will ſtill triumph ouer his Vertues; and therefore it is rather to be feared then doubted, that they will in the end worke him too miſerable, euer to ſee himſelfe ſo happy.

Miſerable *Maurice* therefore, (as the ſhame of his time, the diſgrace of his ſexe, and a prodigious monſter of *Nature*) hauing helliſhly reſolued on the matter, now with a deuiliſh fortitude and helliſh aſſurance paſſeth on to the maner of her Tragedy. He wil not giue eare to God, who ſeekes to diuert him from it, but will hearken to the deuill, who vſeth his beſt Oratory to perſwade and intice him to it. But as the deuil is malicious in his ſubtilty, ſo ſhould we be both wiſe and cautious in our credulity; for if wee beleeue him, he will betray vs; but if wee beleeue God, we ſhall then betray him: he is impatient of delayes, yea, his malice is ſo bloody, and his reuenge ſo cruell, as hee thinkes euery houre a yeare, till hee hath ſent her from Earth to Heauen: He propoſeth vnto himſelfe diuers wayes to murther her, and the deuill who

is neuer abſent but preſent in ſuch helliſh occaſions, makes him as well induſtrious as vndictiue, and implacable, in the contriuing and finiſhing thereof. Now he thinkes to cut her throate as ſhee is in bed: Then to poyſon her at table, either in her meate or drinke. Then againe hee is of opinion to hire ſome to kill her as ſhee is walking in her vineyards; or elſe to cauſe two Watermen to drowne her, as ſhee is taking the ayre in a boate on the Lake, which twice or thrice weekely ſhe is accuſtomed to doe; but yet ſtill he is irreſolute, either which, or which not to reſolue on, till at laſt after a weekes dilatory protaction, hauing with a fatall and infernall ratiotination banded and rebanded theſe ſeuerall bloody proiects in his braynes and contemplations, hee reiecteth them all, as more fuller of difficulty and apparant danger, then of warrantable ſafety, when conſidering that there was a deepe Well in the outter yard, adioyning to the Garden, he holds it fitteſt for his purpoſe to drowne her therein, whereon the deuill and he ſtrikes hands, and ſet vp their reſt and periode.

Whiles thus this gracious mother *Chriſtina* endeauors with her beſt care and prayers, to diuert her graceleſſe ſonne *Maurice* from this his intemperate, and beaſtly ſinne of *Drunkenneſſe*, he (as if hee were no part of her, but rather a limbe of the Deuill) with a monſtrous and inhumane ingratitude, ſets his inuentions and braines on the tenter hookes, to eſpy out the occaſion and time to diſpatch her. When burning with a flaming deſire; to quench the inſatiable thirſt of his reuenge in her blood: he (taking time and opportunity at aduantage) ſeeing all his mothers people abroad to gather in the Vintage, the well open, and

ſhee

shee with a Prayer booke in her hand, walking in the Garden next adioyning, the Deuill infuseth such courage to his heart, his heart such cruelty and inhumanitie to his soule, and his soule to his resolutions, that all things seemed then to conspire to see an end to this his so long desired and affected businesse of murthering and dispatching his mother, he taking on him the part of a mad man; whom it seemed sorrow had suddenly afflicted, and griefe distracted, hee with his hat in his hand, hastily and furiously rusheth into the Garden to his mother, and cries out to her, that there is one of the neighbours children fallen into the well, which he espyed from his chamber window: whereunto (harmelesse good woman) she adding beliefe to his false and perfidious speeches, and being (beyond her selfe) afflicted and amazed with this sodaine and sorrowfull newes, shee throwes away her Booke, and hand in hand with him, (her sighes interrupting her words, and her teares her sighes) she (as if pittie added wings to her feet) trips away to the well, both to see this mournfull spectacle, and chiefly to know, if it any way lay in her possible care to assist, or power to preserue the said child from death: when bringing her to the well, hee better like a fury, then a man, and rather resembling a meere Deuill, then a sonne, fasteneth his left hand on the well-post, and as she lookes into the profunditie thereof, hee with his right hand tips and throwes her in, and so without any more doing, claps downe the couer thereof; when reioycing in his heart that he had sent her to death, because he sees and knowes it now, not in the power of the whole world to saue her life. He (the better to ouerwaile this his impious villany, and to obscure this

his barbarous and bloody fact, ascends her chamber, breakes open her cupboards, trunks, and chests, takes away most of her money, and siluer plate, which hee priuately hides away for his owne behoofe and vse, and so scattereth a few pieces of money, and some of her clothes and apparell in the floore, thereby subtilly to insinuate and intimate to the world, that it were theeues who had robbed and drowned his mother; when stealing a horse out of the stable, he with much secrecy gets him out of the backe doore, which hee leaues open, and from thence rides away to his mothers people in the Vineyards, to whom he relates he hath been all that morne abroad to take the ayre, and is now come to passe the remainder of the day with them, and to be merry: to which end (in his mothers name) he sends for wine from the skirts of the town; and so (as well men as mayds) they carrowse and frolike it till towards night, and then they all returne home, where they find both doores open, his mother their Mistris wanting, and no creature whatsoeuer in the house, whereat they much admire and wonder. So the seruants and himselfe seeke and call her in the Orchards and Gardens, but in vaine, for they find no newes of her; when the mayds one way, and he and the men-seruants another way, seek her as well in the roomes and chambers, as in the streets and neighbors houses, where shee is accustomed to frequent, but to no purpose; for they can neither see nor heare of her; till at length the maydens rushing into her bed-chamber, they find her Cupboard, Chests, and Trunks broken open, and some of her money and apparell strewed heere and there on the floore; whereat amazed, they lamentably cry out at windowes, that theeues haue

haue been there, and robbed their Mistris her Chests and Trunks: which *Maurice*, and the men-seruants of the house ouer-hearing, they arised, and admire at the sight thereof; neither doth his outward feares, or their inward apprehensions, stop or stay vp the meere losse of the goods, but they ioyntly apprehend, and feare the absence of his mother, and their Mistris *Christina*, and are already become iealous and vnbragious of her safetie, and very fearefull, that the theeues haue offered her some violence and cruelties. Whereupon late at night, hearing no newes of her, her sonne (because chiefly interested in this disastrous accident) goes and acquaints the *Bayliffe* of *Morges*, and the rest of the *Crymivall Officers* therewith, who on all sides enquire for her, and make a secret and curious search in the towne, to find out the theeues; and in the meane time (together with *Maurice* and the seruants) leaue not a roome nor place of the house vnsought for her: but their diligence prooues vaine, for they can purchase no newes of her, nor of the losse of the theeues. They remaine in the house all night, and they all with sorrowfull and watchfull eyes, every minute of an houre, expect her, or newes of her. Eight of the clocke the next day strikes, but as yet shee is not so much as seene or heard of: So they againe, in presence of the *Bayliffe*, reuisite and search all places and corners both in the House, Gardens, Orchyards, and Yards; but still to no effect or purpose: when behold, the sacred and secret prouidence of God, in reuealing her to be drowned in the well, not onely beyond the expectation, but also beyond the beliefe of all that were present: for as they are in the middest of their doubts and feares, yea in the very

very depth of their research and perquisition; loe, one of the seruant Mayds, named *Hester*, who was neerest in the fauour, and dearest in the affection of her *Mistris*, hauing that very instant morning taken a nap of an houres sleepe; or thereabouts in a chayre, starts suddenly out of her sleepe and rest, trips to them, and sayes, shee then and there dreamt, that her *Mistris Christina*, was cast into the well, and drowned; the which shee affirmed with many words, and more sighes, out-cries, and teares; which peircing into the eares and thoughts of the Bayliffe and Seruants, and into the very heart and Conscience of this our execrable *Maurice*, they looke pale with griefe and amazement, and hee straineth the highest key of his Art and policy to keepe his cheekes from blushing for shame thereat, & the better to hood winke their eyes & iudgments, from the least spark or shaddow of this his guiltinesse herein, he with many showers of hypocriticall teares, prayes the Bayliffe that vpon *Hesters* dreame, and report the Well may be searched, adding withall, that it was more probable then impossible; that those theeues who robbed his Mothers house, might likewise bee so deuillishly malicious to murther her and throw her into the Well: which the Bayliffe seriously considering, as first the maides dreame, then the Sonnes request and teares, hee instantly in presence of all those of the house, as also of many of the next neighbours whom he had purposely assembled: Caused the Well to be searched and sounded, where the hooke taking hould of her clothes, they instantly bring vp the dead body of his Mother and their Mistresse *Christina*: the skull of whose head was lamentably broken, and her braines pit-

pittifully daſhed out with her fall. All are amazed, her Seruants greeue, and her helliſh Sonne *Maurice* weepes and cries more then all the reſt at this mournfull ſpectacle. The Bayliffe carefully and punctually againe examine *Heſter*, if God in her dreame reuealed her not, the manner how, and the perſons who had thus throwne her Miſtreſſe into the Well; Shee anſwereth negatiuely according to the truth, that ſhee had already deliuered as much as ſhee knew of that mournefull buſineſſe. When *Maurice* to ſhew his forwardneſſe and zeale, for the detection and finding out of his Mothers murtherers, hee pretends that he ſuſpects *Heſter* to be acceſſary, and to haue a hand herein. But the Bayliffe and common Councell of *Morges*, hauing neither paſſion nor partiality to dazle and inueagle the eyes of their iudgement, finding no reaſon or ground of probability to accuſe her, or which might tend or conduce that way; They free her without farther queſtioning her, and ſo (as it hath beene formerly remembred) they all concurring in opinion that the theeues who robbed her, had vndoubtedly throwne her into the Well: They giue leaue to *Maurice* to bury his breathleſſe mother, which he doth with the greateſt pompe & decency, requiſite as well to her ranke and quality, as to his affection and dutie; and the better to fanne off the leaſt duſt or ſmoake of ſuſpition, which might any way fall vpon the luſtre of his Innocency, he at her Funerall, (to the eye of the world) ſheds many riuolets of teares. But alas what is this, to this his foule and execrable ſinne of murthering his mother; for although it bleere the eyes, and inueigle the iudgements of the Bayliffe and his aſſociates, the Cymi-

nell Iudges of *Morges*, yet *God* the Great and *Soueraigne* Iudge of *Heauen* and *Earth*, will not bee thus deluded, cannot be thus diceiued herein. No, no, for albeit hee be mercifull, yet His deuine *Maieſty* is too Iuſt, to let crimes of this helliſh nature goe either vndetected or vnpuniſhed.

Wee haue ſeene this execrable Sonne ſo bloody hearted and handed, as with a deuilliſh rage, and inhumane and infernall furie, to drowne his own deere & tender Mother; & with as much cruelty as ingratitude, to throw her from the world into a Well, who with many bitter gripes & torments (to the hazzard and perill of her life) threw him from her wombe into the world: and the prouidence and Iuſtice of *God* will not lead the curioſity of the Reader farre, before wee ſee this miſerable miſcreant ouertaken, with the impetuous ſtormes of *Gods* reuenge, and the fiery guſts and tempeſts of his iuſt indignation for the ſame, notwithſtanding that his ſubtill malice, and malicious ſubtilty, haue ſo cunningly contriued, and ſo ſecretly acted and compacted it with the deuill, that no earthly perſon or ſublunary eye, can any way accuſe, much leſſe conuict him thereof; as marke the ſequell, and it will briefly and truly informe thee how.

As ſoone as he hath buryed his Mother, his blacke mourning apparell, doth in his heart & actions work ſuch poore and weake effects of repentance and ſorrow for her vntimely death, as where diuers others lament and grieue, he contrariwiſe reioyceth and triumpheth thereat, and by her deceaſe being now become Lord and Maſter of all, he like a graceleſſe villaine falls againe to his old carowſing companions, and

and veine of drunkenneſſe; wherein hee takes ſuch ſingular delight and glory, as hee makes it not onely his paſtime and exerciſe by day, but his practiſe and recreation by night; And as the Lord hath infinite meanes and wayes to ſcourge and reuenge the enormity of our delicts and crimes, ſo wee ſhall ſhortly ſee for our inſtruction, and obſerue for our reformation, that this vngoldly and beaſtly Vice of drunkenneſſe of his, which is his moſt ſecret boſome and darling Sinne, will in the end prooue a rauenous *Vulture* to deuour, and a fatall *Serpent* to eate out the bowels, firſt of his wealth and proſperity, and then of his life; for it not onely takes vp his time but his ſtudie, in ſo much as I may as truely auerre to my griefe, as affirme to his ſhame, that he leueleth at nothing more then to make it his felicity, which ſwiniſh exceſſe and intemperancy (as a puniſhment inſeperably incident and infalibly heriditary to that ſinne) doth within three monethes make him ſell away all his Lands; yea, and the greateſt part of his plate, and houſhold-ſtuffe, So his drunkenneſſe firſt, but then chiefly Gods Iuſtice and reuenge purſuing his foule and inhumane crime of drowning his Mother, makes him of being left rich by her, within a very ſhort time become very extreame poore and miſerable; So as hee runnes deepely into debts, yea, his debts are by this time become ſo exceedingly vrgent and clamorous, as contrary to his hopes and feares, when he leaſt dreames thereof; hee is impriſoned by his Mercer and Draper, for the blackes of his Mothers Funerall, to both whom hee is indebted the ſome of three hundred crownes, which is farre more then either his purſe can diſcharge, or his credit and Eſtate

now ſatisfies. When abandoned of all his friends, his meanes ſpent and conſumed, and nothing left him to excerciſe his patience in priſon, but Diſpaire; nor to comfort him, but the terrours of his bloody and guilty Conſcience: Hee is clapt into a ſtinking Vault or Dungeon, where (in horror and deteſtation of his bloody cryme) the Glorious Lampe of Heauen, the Sunne, diſdaines to ſend his radiant and glittering beames to comfort him; ſo as he who before was accuſtomed to fare deliciouſly, and as it were to ſwill and drowne himſelfe in the beſt, and moſt curious wines, now hee muſt content himſelfe onely with courſe bread and water; and yet his miſery is ſo extreame, & that extremity of his ſo miſerable, as he hath hardly enough to maintaine & ſuſtaine life: But wee ſhall ſee that this firſt affliction of his, will inſtantly be followed and ouertaken by a ſecond.

Whitſonday being ariued, hee petitioneth his Goalor (for that day) to haue the liberty of the yarde, and the freedome of the ayre, which is granted him, when at night, deſcending the ſtayres, againe to be pent vp in his obſcure Dungeon, his foote ſlips, and he receiues a fearefull fall, whereof the bone of his right Arme is broken in two peeces; and hauing no Chirurgion to looke to it, it putrifies and rots, ſo as for the preſeruing of his life, hee within fifteene dayes is enforced to haue it cut off, a little below the ſhoulder: and this was the very ſame Hand and Arme which threw his Mother into the Well. A ſingular act of *Gods* reuenging Iuſtice, and Iuſt reuenge ſhewen herein. Oh that it may bee deepely imprinted in our hearts, and ingrauen in our ſoules, that the Reader hereof, of what ſexe or quality ſoeuer,

euer, may as it were ſtand amazed, at the conſideration of *Maurice* his impious ſinne towards *God*, and of *Gods* due and true reuenge and requitall thereof, in his iuſt Iudgement and affliction towards him.

But this is not enough for *Maurice* to ſuffer, nor for *God* to inflict on him for this his bloody and inhumane Crime, in muthering his Mother: nor to ſay the truth, it is but the *Prologue*, to the deplorable, yet deſerued puniſhment, which is immediatly ready to ſurpriſe and befall him. For to the end, that the truth may informe our curioſitie, and our curioſitie vs, of the *Cataſtrophe* of this Tragedy; we muſt vnderſtand, that it was the pleaſure and prouidence of God, that the breaking and cutting away of *Maurice* his Arme, proued the breake-necke of his patience, and the cutting away of his content and iudgement. The deuill cauſed him moſt inhumanly to drowne his Mother, the which he might haue refuſed to perpetrate, but would not; and now God in expiation thereof, ſends him Rage for Reaſon, Diſpaire for Comfort, and Madneſſe for Sobriety, the which hee would flie and eſchew, but cannot. Hee hath committed this execrable crime beyond the rules and Lawes of *Nature*; and therefore God hath ordained, that hee ſhould feele many degrees of puniſhments, and this is not onely the Law, but the rule of *Grace*. Of all degrees of afflictions, Madneſſe is the moſt to bee pitied, and the worſt to be cured; ſith it makes a man goe farre beyond Reaſon; and therefore to come farre too ſhort of himſelfe, it is held of ſome to be a ſickneſſe of the Liuer, of others, an ouerfuming of the blood, and of others a debility of the braine: But in

this our execrable wretched *Maurice*, it was the infectious Malady of his ſoule, which God ſent purpoſely into his braines, to bee reuenged of his heart, for ſo inhumanly drowing his Mother: For although his Diuine Maieſty, hath infinite more wayes to puniſh murther, then man hath to commit it; yet that he might make the detection of this of wretched *Maurice*, as ſtrange as the complotting and finiſhing thereof was cruelly inhumane, and inhumanely cruell; he purpoſely ſends it him; for although ſince his impriſonment, hunger had ſo taken downe his ſtomacke, and quelled his courage, as his former volubility of ſpeech, was now reduced to a kinde of ſorrowfull and penſiue ſilence; yet as ſoone as his braines and ſenſes, were poſſeſſed and captiuated with this prodigious Lunacy, & outragious phrenſie, then his fits were ſo violent, and that violence ſo implacable; as his ſpeeches were ſo many fearefull outcries and howlings, and his words ſo many vncouth and vnheard of rauings. So that whoſoeuer either heard or ſaw him, hee might iuſtly conceiue and affirme, that hee had thunder in his tongue and lightning in his eyes: For his crime made this his affliction and phrenſie of his, ſo miſerable, ſo impetuous, as he ſpake non-ſenſe perfectly, and looked rather like a Furie then a Man; yea, his foule Conſcience and poluted ſoule, rung him ſo many *Panicke* feares, and terrors of Diſpaire, as hee was affrayd of all things, and angry with himſelfe, becauſe he could be no more affraid of himſelfe; So as that Dungeon which could impriſon his body, was not capeable to containe his thoughts, much leſſe to immure his feares; & in this miſerable plight & perplexity: he remained

mained for the ſpace of ten dayes and nights, without any intermiſſion, or hope of remedy; which infinitely diſturbed his fellow priſoners, and chiefly his Goalor, whoſe yeares had neuer beene accuſtomed to heare ſuch diſcordant tunes, much leſſe to bee taken vp with ſuch diſtaſtfull and fearefull melody.

He acquaints the Common *Councell* of the towne hereof, & importunatlie ſolicits them, that they will remooue his diſtracted priſoner *Maurice*, to ſome more fitter and more conuenient place. Who remembring what *Maurice* had beene, and now conſidering & ſeeing what he is; They, who heretofore would not be ſo charitable to releeue his pouertie, are yet now ſo religiouſly compaſſionate, as they pittie his Madneſſe; So they command him from a Dungeon, to a Chamber, from his palate of ſtraw to a fetherbed, from his bread and water, to wholeſome meates and broths; but all this will not ſuffice, and to ſhew themſelues, not onely good men, but good Chriſtians, they to reſtore him to his wits and ſenſes, make yet a farther progreſſion in Charity. They cauſe him to be conferred with, by many good Diuines, who are not onely eloquent, but powerfull to perſwade him to pray often, and to practiſe other Chriſtian duties & offices; but his cries are ſo outragious, and his rauings ſo extrauagant, as hee is as vncapeable to reliſh their reaſons, as they are to vnderſtand his rage: When the very immediate Finger, & Prouidence of God makes them yet ſo ſenſible of his vnparalell'd miſery, as they are reſolued to remooue him from his Priſon to an Hoſpitall, thereby to take the benefit of the ayre in the Gardens, Walkes and Fields; hoping that they might preuaile with

with him, to recall his wits, and re-eſtabliſh his ſenſes in their proper ſeats of *Vnderſtanding*, and ſtations of *Iudgement*. When heere, (oh heere) I coniure thee *Chriſtian* Reader to ſtand amazed and wonder with me, at the ſacred and ſecret Iuſtice of the *Lord*, expreſſed and demonſtrated in this Accident; For as his Vnder-Gaolor (by the *Magiſtrates* Command) takes him by the hand, with an intent to conduct him foorth from the Priſon to an Hoſpitall; His bloudy Crime (like ſo many Bloud-hounds) purſuing his guiltie Conſcience and Soule; his thoughts ſo informd his knowledge, and his knowledge ſo confirmes his beliefe, that the drowning of his Mother is detected; and that they now drawe him from his Priſon to the place of Execution to ſuffer death for the ſame. Which apprehention and feare, *God* putting into his conceits and heart, in deſpite of his madneſſe; he wanting an accuſer. Loe, heere hee himſelfe both accuſeth and condemneth himſelfe for the ſame; for the very Image of that conceite redoubliug his feare, as his feare did his phrenſie and madneſſe. He in the middeſt of thoſe fitts, and the height of that Agony and Anxietie, Cries out with a loud voice, *I haue drowned my Mother in the Well, I haue drowned my Mother in the Well, God will haue mee to Confeſſe it before he ſuffer you to hang mee; I ſpeake it on earth, and by my part of Heauen, What I now Confeſſe is true.* Which words no ſooner eſcaped his tongue, but he inſtantly returnes againe to his outcryes of Phrenſie and madneſſe. His Gaolers, and the reſt are amazed at theſe fearefull ſpeeches, and bloudy Confeſsion of his; which notwithſtanding that they attribute to madneſſe, yet they leade him

to

to the Hospitall, He still raving and crying as he passeth the streets: But Oh! Let vs heere farther admire with wonder, and wonder with admiration, at the prouidence and mercy of God here againe miraculously made apparent and manifested in this execrable wretch *Maurice*, for hee who outragiously cried in his prison and licentiously raued in the street, is no sooner entered into the Hospitall, but the pleasure of God had so ordained it, as his Madnesse fully falls from him, and hee absolutely recouereth againe his wits and senses, in such firme and settled manner, as if hee had neuer formerly beene touched or afflicted therewith.

His Gaolors make report to the Magistrates, first of his confession of drowning his Mother, and then of his sudden and miraculous recouering of his perfect memory, iudgement and senses; as soone as he set foote within the Hospitall: Whereupon they as much astonished at the one, as wondering at the other; doe instantly repaire thither to him, and there araigne and accuse him, for that inhumane and bloody fact of his, whereof his owne Euidence and Confession hath now made him guilty. But they take him for another, or at least, hee will not be the same man: Hee denies this horrible and bloody crime of his, with many oathes and asseuerations; which they maintaine and affirme he hath confessed, sayes, That they either heard a Dreame or saw a Vision, whereof hee neither dreamt nor thought of; and that he was ready to lose all the blood and life of his body to finde out, and to be reuenged of the murtherers of his Mother.

But the Magistrates are deafe to his *Apologie*, and

conſidering the violence of his Madneſſe by its ſudden abandoning him, as alſo his free and vninforced confeſſion of drowning his Mother; they conceiue that Gods prouidence and Iuſtice doth ſtrongly operate in the detection of this foule and inhumane murther; and therefore contemning his requeſts and oathes (in the vindication of his Innocency) they cauſe him to be refetched from the Hoſpitall, to the Priſon, and there adiudge him to the Racke, when although his heart and ſoule be terrified and affrighted with his apprehenſion and accuſation; Yet the deuill is ſo ſtrong with him, as he cannot yet finde in his heart to relent, much leſſe to repent this foule and inhumane crime of his; but conſidering that hee acted it ſo ſecretly, as all the world could not produce a witneſſe againſt himſelfe, except himſelfe; he vowes hee will be ſo impious and prophane in his fortitude and courage, as to diſdaine theſe his torments; and to looke on them and his Tormentor with an eye, rather of contempt then feare: But God will be as propitious and indulgent to him, as hee is rebellious and refractory to God; for heere wee ſhall ſee both his Conſcience and reſolutions taught another rule, and preſcribed a contrary Law; yea, heere wee ſhall behold and obſerue in him, that now *Righteouſneſſe* ſhall triumph ouer *Sinne*, *Grace* ouer *Nature*, his *Soule* ouer his *Body*, *Heauen* ouer *Hell*, and *GOD* ouer *Satan*; for at the very firſt ſight of the Racke, the ſight & remembrance of his bloody crime, makes him ſhake and tremble extreamely, when his ſoule being illuminated, by the reſplendant Sunne beames of Gods mercy, and the foggie miſts of Hell and Satan, expelled and baniſhed

ſhed thence, hee falls to the ground on his knees, firſt beates his breaſt, and then erecting his eyes and hands towards Heauen; hee (with a whole deluge of teares) againe confeſſeth, that hee had drowned his Mother in the Well, from and for the which hee humbly craueth remiſſion, both from Earth and Heauen.

And although there bee no doubt, but God will forgiue his ſoule for this his ſoule murther; Yet the Magiſtrates of *Morges*, who haue Grauity in their lookes, Religion in their hearts & ſpeeches, & Iuſtice in their actions, will not pardon his body; ſo in deteſtation of this his feafull crime, and inhumane parracide, they in the morning condemne him, that very after-noone to be hanged. At the pronouncing of which ſentence, as hee hath reaſon to aprooue the equity of their Iuſtice in condemning him to die, ſo he cannot refraine from grieuing at the ſtrictneſſe of the time, which they allot him for his preparation to death. *But as ſoone as we forſake the deuill, we make our peace with God.*

All *Morges* and *Loſanna* rings of this mournefull and Tragicall newes, and in deteſtation of this mournefull, inhumane and bloody crime of our execrable *Maurice*, they flocke from all parts and ſtreetes to the place of execution, to ſee him expiate it by his death, and ſo to take his laſt farewell of his life.

The Diuines, who are giuen him for fortifying and aſſiſting his ſoule, in this her flight & tranſmigration from Earth to Heauen, haue religiouſly preuailed with him, ſo as they make him ſee the foulneſſe of his crime, in the ſharpeneſſe of his contrition and

repentance for the ſame; yea, hee is become ſo humble and withall ſo ſorrowfull, for this his bloody and degenerate offence, as I know not whether hee thinke thereof with more griefe, or remember it with deteſtation & repentance. At his aſcending the Ladder, moſt of his Spectators cannot refraine from weeping, and the very ſight of their teares prooues the *Argument* of his; as his remembrance of murthering his Mother was the cauſe.

He tells them hee greeues at his very ſoule, for the fouleneſſe of his fact, in giuing his Mother her death, of whom he had receiued his life. He affirmes, that Drunkenneſſe was not onely the roote, but the cauſe of this his beggery and miſery, of his crime and puniſhment, and of his deboſhed life and deſerued death, from which with a world of ſighes and teares; hee ſeekes and endeuours to diuert all thoſe who affect and practiſe that beaſtly Vice. He declares, that his Mother was too vertuous ſo ſoone to goe out of the world, and himſelfe too vitious (and withall too cruell) any longer to liue in it; that the ſinnes of his life, had deſerued this his ſhamefull death; and although hee could not preuent the laſt, yet, that hee heartily and ſorrowfully repented the firſt. Hee prayed God to be mercifull to his ſoule, and then beſought the world to pray vnto God for that mercy; when ſpeaking a few words to himſelfe, and ſealing them with many teares, and farre fetched ſighes; he laſtly bids the world farewell, when enuiting the Executioner to doe his Office, he is turned ouer.

And ſuch was the vitious life, and deſerued death of this Execrable Sonne and bloody Villaine *Maurice*: wherein I muſt confeſſe, that although his end were

were ſhamefull and ſharpe; yet, it was by farre too too milde for the foulenesse of his crime, in ſo cruelly murthering his deere Mother *Chriſtina*, whom the Lawes, both of *Nature* and *Grace* commanded him to preſerue and cheriſh: Yea, let all Sonnes and Daughters of all ages and rankes, whatſoeuer looke on this bloody and diſaſterous example of his, with feare; and feare to commit the like by the ſight of his puniſhment. It is a Hiſtory worthy, both of our meditation and deteſtation, whether we caſt our eyes on his drunkenneſſe, or fixe our thoughts and hearts on his murther: Thoſe who loue and feare God, are happy in their liues, and fortunate in their deaths; but thoſe who will neither feare nor loue him, very ſeldome prooue fortunate in the one, neuer happy in the other; and to the reſt of our ſinnes, if we once conſent and giue way to adde that ſcarlet, and crying one of Murther; that blood which we vntimely ſend to the Earth, will in Gods due time draw downe vengeance on our Heads from *Heauen*; *Charitie* is the marke of a *Chriſtian*, and the ſhedding of Innocent blood, either that of an *Infidell*, an *Athieſt*, or a *Deuill*. O therefore let vs affect and ſtriue to hate it in others, and ſo ſhall wee the better know how to deteſt and abhorre it in our ſelues, which that wee may all know to our comforts, and remember to our conſolations, direct vs O Lord our God, and ſo we ſhall be directed.

FINIS.

ERRATA.

PAge 16. line 3. for will still affect him, read thee will still affect him, p. 33. l. 13. for forsake, read wilt forsake. p. 61. l. 7. for to adde to the perfection, r. adde to the perfection. p. 66. l. 3. for chance, r. chaire. p. 80. line 22. for bookes, r. booke. p. 85. l. 6. for fumes and reuenge, rea. fumes of reuenge. p. 93. l. 11. for not onely, r. will not onely. p. 109. l. 15. for sequest r. sequester. p. 112. l. 30. for demolutions, re. demolitions. p. 119. l. 9. for permit not those, r. permit those. p. 124. l. 11. for beautie, reade beauties. p. 127. l. 6. for lenitie, r. lenitie. page 134. l. 31. for crucifie, rea. scarifie. pag. 159. l. 15. for Spaine his Master, r. of Spaine. p. 208. l. 13. for incomputable, rea. incompatible. pag. 219. l. 16. for worke him, r. make him. p. 231. l. 4. for yeares, r. eares.

BRITISH MUSEUM 17 OCT 86

Katherine Enoch 1800 [illegible]